

إسرائيل والنّبوءات في القرآن

ISRAEL
AND THE
PROPHECIES
OF THE
HOLY QUR'ÁN

5th REVISED EDITION

A Comprehensive Explanation of the
Appearance of al-Masīh al-Dajjāl

or

The Antichrist and
Yájúj (Gog) and Májúj (Magog)

in the Light of
the Modern Power Blocs,
their Scientific Means of
Destruction and Nuclear War

This book gives valuable information regarding the
above prophecies in respect of our current world situation

By
'ALI AKBAR

ISRAEL AND THE PROPHECIES OF THE HOLY QUR'ÂN

IF YOU WANT TO EMBRACE
HATRED AND INTOLERANCE, THIS
IS THE BOOK FOR YOU...

MR. AKBAR'S FAR-FETCHED
EXPLANATIONS AND UNREASONABLE
PROOF TEXTING SHOW TRUTH IS
NOT HIS AIM AND LOVE IS NOT HIS
WAY.

MUHAMMAD (PEACE BE ON HIM)
TEACHES US TO TOLERATE CHRISTIANS
AND JEWS AND THAT THEIR HOLY
BOOKS ARE INSPIRED BY GOD...
PLEASE SEEK THE HADIS AND
READ HOLY Q'ÂN FOR YOURSELF
Don't let men like this try
AND TAKE THE SPIRITS PLACE TO
REVEAL THE MEANING OF SCRIPTURE...

First Edition, February 1963

Second Edition, July 1963

Third Edition, February 1965

Fourth Edition, December 1968

Fifth Edition, November 1971

إِسْرَائِيلُ وَالنَّبِيُّاتُ فِي الْقُرْآنِ

ISRAEL AND THE PROPHECIES OF THE HOLY QUR'ÁN

*A Discussion of the Prophecies of the Qur'án
and those of the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!)
about the Tragedies of Our Time*

By

'ALI AKBAR

[Israel and the prophecies of the Holy Qur'án]

Published by

Seraj Publications, Leckwith, Cardiff.

Printed in Great Britain for the Publishers,
Seraj Publications, 17 Broadstairs Road, Leckwith, Cardiff by
A. A. Verstage Ltd., Basingstoke, Hants, England.

Thirty years of fully integrated life in Britain have given Mr. 'Ali Akbar an insight into the social, religious and cultural problems which the West is facing today. His eighteen years' married life with a devout and practising British Muslim has been a great asset in his assessment of the situation which he has been able to make after fifteen years of comparative study of religions.

This book is not merely an academic study of a religious subject ; it is an exposition of the luring façade of the Western culture of which our Muslim youth are becoming more and more enamoured.

Prophecies of the Holy Qur'án, especially pertaining to Gog and Magog (*Yájúj, Májúj and Dajjál*), have been dealt with and explained in such a way that the age-old confusion surrounding this subject is cleared, leaving the reader with a clearer grasp of the true significance of these prophecies.

Those of our youth who mistakenly believe that modern sciences and technology are the panacea for all our human problems will find their Western idol disintegrating limb by limb through the pages of this book and will, perhaps, awaken to the realities of those spiritual forces which are at work for the uplift of man—the man created in the image of God.

COPYRIGHT

Any Muslim publisher wishing to publish this book in English or any other language will be given permission free of royalties, but only on the condition that prior permission in writing should be obtained from the author at the address given under the Preface.

'ALI AKBAR

LETTERS FROM READERS

A small selection of the many letters received from readers.

Kassim Ali Chandoo,
708, 15th Ave., S.E.,
Minneapolis,
Minnesota 55414,
U.S.A.

1st August, 1965.

My dear Brother in Islam, 'Alí Akbar,

Peace be upon you, and the Mercy of Alláh and His Blessings!

I am a Muslim student from Tanzania, East Africa (I come from the island of Zanzibar). I am a Graduate student working for my M.A. in Education. I hope to finish my work soon and go home.

I am writing this letter to thank you for your most thought-provoking book, "*Prophecies of the Holy Qur'an*", which I enjoyed reading. You have done your duty of warning the Muslims of today, who are every day drawn nearer and nearer to the Antichrist.

I personally agree with you on all the points made in your book. Last year I ordered 50 copies and distributed them among the Muslim students here at the University of Minnesota.

Every day I become more and more convinced that this is indeed the age of the Antichrist (Dajjál). The Muslims in our Muslim countries—especially the women—are madly rushing forward to embrace the Dajjál.

Your Brother in Islam,
Kassim 'Alí Chandoo.

University of Newcastle Islamic Society

Union Society,
Kings Walk,
Newcastle-upon-Tyne, 1,
England.

1st January, 1967.

Dear Brother,

Assalámu 'alaykum!

A few days ago, I "discovered" a letter of yours which you wrote to me in April, 1963. At that time, I was not mature enough, perhaps, to appreciate it fully. I wholeheartedly agree with you now, however, in your association of the various Prophecies with the European Christian nations.

I should like to read your book again, and if you have a spare copy that you could send me, I shall be grateful to you.

However, if you can send me five copies together with their total price, I shall send you the specific amount and try to sell them to our members.

By the way, we hold fortnightly discussion meetings in the University Union on Saturdays and I shall be grateful if you can come sometime to give us a talk either about your book or on any other relevant subject.

Yours in Islam,
Muhammad Afzal
(President).

Jasim Hajj 'Abed Jásim,
C/o 'Abdullatef Hajj 'Abed Jásim Assírráj,
Sooq al-Haddádn,
Samawah,
IRAQ.

5th Dhú-al-Hijjah 1388, 22nd February, 1969.

My very dear Brother 'Alí Akbar and my dear Sister 'Ayesah,

Assalámu 'alaykum!

I was so glad to have your very kind letter, together with six copies of your new book, "*Prophecies of The Holy Qur'an*". From a quick glance at the book I could see how heavy your task was in writing such a valuable book! I gave some of its copies to the 'Ulemá in my town. After they had realized the importance of the subjects the book dealt with, they insisted that I must undertake the task of translating the book into the Arabic language.

An Islamic organization in my town will undertake the task of publishing it. This organization congratulates you on having done such a valuable work especially for the world of today. It asks me to send you its warmest regards and thanks, so I am writing this letter to ask your permission to translate the book into Arabic. Also it would be nice if we gave a short biographical sketch of you in the book. Please be kind enough to write us something about yourself.

I have shown your book to other people and they admired you.

I hope that we meet again soon, *In shá Alláh*. May Allah bless your efforts in the service of His Religion.

Wa as-Salám!

Jásim.

Hajee J. A. Samy,
1st Floor,
22, Jalan Klyne,
Kuala Lampur,
Malaysia.

26th April, 1969.

Dear Brother in Islam,

Assalámu 'alaykum!

I have great pleasure to inform you that I have received a copy of your most valuable and interesting book, "*Prophecies of the Holy Qur'an*", and I thank you very much for your gift. I may say that I have already in my possession an earlier edition, which I have studied with all the benefits of our faith.

I have heard of your most generous gift of the whole of your recent publication for the sake of Islam. It is indeed a most noble deed and I am sure you will have the blessings of Almighty Allah.

Yours fraternally,
J. A. Samy.

90, Jalan Chengam,
Sembawang Hills Estate,
Singapore.

30th September, 1969.

Dear Brother,

Assalámu 'alaykum!

I have just finished reading the book, "*Prophecies of the Holy Qur'an*", that you sent to me. It is a wonderful book. Once I started to read I couldn't stop. Mr. Akhtar will be reading it next. He also asked me if I could get him 25 copies. He is going to give them to his friends and new converts. Do you want me to send you the cash now or on delivery?

Many thanks for sending me this wonderful book, I will be writing to Mr. 'Alí Akbar in the near future, looking forward to hearing from you soon.

Yours in Islam,
Mahmood Norrington.

(Copy of a letter sent to a personal friend, Tilmeez al-Din 'Abdulláh, an English Muslim.)

Isma'il Book Depot,
G.P.O. Box 149,
Singapore.

16th March, 1970.

Dear Sir,

Re: Prophecies of the Holy Qur'an.

We have an opportunity to go through your above book and it is indeed a valuable one which we believe must be in the hands of each and every Muslim all over the world. We are sincerely praying for your long and healthy prosperous life so that the entire Muslim world will continue to benefit from your contribution.

We wish to publish your above mentioned book in the Tamil and Malay languages and therefore we need your valued permission to enable us to proceed in our undertaking.

It is our desire to publish the book in Tamil especially for the benefit of the Tamil Muslims in South India, and in Malay for Malaysians and Indonesians.

Your valued early reply will be very much appreciated.

Yours faithfully,
Muhammad Isma'il.

Muhammad Taufiek Ahmad,
Dar Tabliegh El-Islam and
Al-Bareed El-Islami,
P.O. Box 112,
Cairo,
U.A.R.

21-1-1390 29-3-1970.

Dear Brother Mr. 'Alí Akbar,

Wa 'alaykum asalám wa Rahmatulláhi wa Barakátuh!

Many thanks for your very kind letter of 6th February and for the fourth edition of your book which I have read. We are very pleased to know that your

very useful book will be printed in Arabic, Tamil and Malay languages. It is good to hear of such pure-hearted brothers in Singapore and Iraq who see to it that the teachings of Islam reach every human being in his own language. May Alláh give you all kinds of power to go forward in this noble way. We are very happy that you will kindly send us copies of the translations. Many thanks in anticipation.

I will send some copies to Brother Yásir 'Arafát, Leader of al-Fath, requesting him to study carefully the message and the contents of this book. I gave the copy which you sent me to one member of the al-Fath organization to read, and after reading it, gave it on to another friend to read also. Both find it wonderful. We all thank you for doing this noble service to our faith.

We have already distributed many copies of your valuable book as a present from you to the famous writers and professors of the universities. All of them are quite happy with it and very thankful to you. When I receive the 100 copies which you have sent, I will put every copy in the hands of those who understand its message. This book is very important to those who read English and it will be more useful to readers in the Muslim world. Anyway, I will, *In shá Alláh*, try to find someone who can translate it into Arabic.

We are all standing in need of the help of Alláh; He is Merciful. It is enough to be rich in our hearts; for what will the material wealth avail us if our hearts are void of faith?

Please accept our hearty regards and best wishes.

We remain,

Yours in Islam,
Muhammad Taufiek.

The Pyramid Book House (Pte) Ltd.,
G.P.O. Box 961,
70-A The Arcade,
Singapore.

4.6.70.

Janab 'Alí Akbar,

Assalámu 'alaykum

Re: Prophecies of the Holy Qur'án.

We are sellers of Islamic books and magazines. Our object is to make available to all Muslims and especially to our brothers of the lower income group, and as cheaply as possible, Islamic books from all countries and help them thereby to acquire knowledge of Islam. We are also distributing eighteen Islamic Magazines from seven countries.

We are also interested in the publishing of Islamic books to promote the above object. We therefore approach your goodself to grant us the permission to reprint and publish *Prophecies of the Holy Qur'án* in English and later in Malay and possibly in other Indian languages like Urdú, Tamil, Hindi, Malayalam, etc.

The initial and immediate object of our publications is to circulate at cheap prices very pertinent and necessary books on Islam that would help the ordinary Muslim, and a casual perusal of such books would inculcate in them some desire to read further other books on Islam.

We consider your book the *Prophecies of the Holy Qur'án* as a very desirable addition to our list of publications. We will be grateful to receive from your good-

self, the written authority to reprint the book in English and also in any other language as deemed necessary.

For your noble gesture of giving us the publishing rights, free of royalties, we pray to Alláh to reward you in ample measure.

Yours in Islam,

The Pyramid Book House (Pte) Ltd.

T. M. Muhammad 'Abdul Kader,
Managing Director.

Thomas G. Devereaux,
O.C. Division,
U.S.S. Ogden LPD-5,
FPO San Francisco,
California 96601,
U.S.A.

29th July, 1970.

Dear Mr. Akbar,

As Salám 'alaykum.

This is my first letter in an attempt to get acquainted with you. I have read your book entitled, *Prophecies of the Holy Qur'án*, and I must say that it is a masterpiece.

Ever since reading your work I have had a constant urge within myself to find out as much about Islam as I possibly can. I am also the proud owner of the Holy Qur'án, by Yusaf 'Alí, which is the most beautiful and spiritually pure religious book I have ever read. The more I delve in these Holy Scriptures, the more the voice of my conscience urges me to accept Islam and get closer to God. Yet I find myself faced with much confusion, and this is my main motive in writing to you. I would appreciate it very much, if you would correspond with me on questions pertaining to Islam. My mind is clouded with hundreds of questions pertaining to this subject, and I am writing to you because I know of no one who is an authority on Islam whom I can turn to for advice and answers to my questions.

As you are well aware, this is a country that is hostile as well as apathetic towards the religion of Islam. Therefore, I trust that you will answer this letter so that we may begin correspondence. I am sure that you will be able to clear up much of the fog that hovers over my mind during my quest for Islamization. Through the grace and will of Alláh I hope to join the ranks of those who embrace Islam and become an orthodox Sunní Muslim like yourself. I shall be greatly indebted to you for your assistance.

Waiting to hear from you.

Sincerely,

Thomas G. Devereaux.

Muhammad Abdul Matlib,
c/o M. Azizur Rahman,
Cheragi Bazar,
P.O. Baraigram,
District Cachar,
ASSAM, INDIA.

22.8.70.

Dear Mr. 'Alī Akbar,

Assalāmu 'alaykum.

I have been requested by Muhammad Nuruz 'Alī of the Village Serpur to send this letter.

Please send a copy of your valuable book *Prophecies of the Holy Qur'an* to the address given above. Muhammad Nuruz 'Alī showed me the book and I agreed with him to translate it into Bengali.

The book is so popular in our country that the copies sent by you are not now available, so please send more at your earliest leisure.

Many thanks.

Yours faithfully,

Muhammad Abdul Matlib.

Muhammad Anas Hatta,
1375 Goettingen Street,
San Francisco,
California 94134,
U.S.A.

Dear Mr. 'Alī Akbar,

Wassalāmu 'alaykum. *Wa i'ta*

I wish to thank you for sending me the book the *Prophecies of the Holy Qur'an*. It is really a very frank, although controversial book. I hope anyone that reads the book will gain a spiritual insight and love the religion of Islam. *In shā Allāh*.

Yours sincerely,

Muhammad Anas Hatta.

PREFACE

Today the world is moving fast with various scientific achievements while our spiritual progress is not keeping pace with it. The great nations of the world are trying to bring about everlasting peace, or at least they are claiming to do so; and at the same time they continue to produce more and more lethal weapons which can destroy and devastate far beyond the imagination of the man in the street. The general public is at a loss to understand the reasons for such contradictory activities of these great nations.

In this book I have made a humble attempt at explaining some of the reasons — especially those pertaining to the spiritual aspect of the problem. Although, as the very title of the book shows, I have drawn my main inspiration from the Islamic sources, I have also tried to study other religions. During the past few years I have given serious thought to the history and the background of Islam and Christianity. I have also studied the religions and the geographical history of Judaism, Hinduism, Buddhism, Zoroastrianism, Shintoism and Taoism — at least in so far as to give myself a general idea of these religions.

I consider myself an orthodox Sunni Muslim, but not in any Sectarian sense. I believe that the true spirit of the teachings of the Holy Qur'an does not permit of any dogmas and, therefore, there is no scope for sectarianism within Islam. I am a fundamentalist, but not in the sense of ritualism and superstition which practices have been grafted, unfortunately, into our simple and straightforward religion by some of our Muslim brethren.

In this revised version, I have made some alterations and additions which, I hope, the readers will find both informative and interesting. My motive in writing this book is not to win over new converts to Islam, but to bring to the notice of my Muslim brethren certain faith-reviving aspects of our religion. This book is being addressed especially to those of our Muslims who are being enamoured of the glitter of the western civilization to the extent that they are trying to imitate and adopt it blindfold. It is very sad to see such people throwing overboard the intrinsic values of their own culture and religion and ending up as belonging neither here nor there. The tragic condition of such people is like the condition of the Arabs described in the following verse of the Holy Qur'an:

قَالَتِ الْأَعْرَابُ آمَنَّا
قُلْ لَمْ تُؤْمِنُوا وَلَكِنْ قُولُوا أَسْلَمْنَا وَلَمَّا
يَدْخُلِ الْإِيمَانُ فِي قُلُوبِكُمْ

The wandering Arabs say: We believe, say (unto them O Muhammad!): You believe not, but rather say, We submit; for the faith has not yet entered into your hearts (The Qur'an, 49 : 14).

And again the Qur'an tells us:

وَمِنْهُمْ
أُمِّيُّونَ لَا يَعْلَمُونَ الْكِتَابَ إِلَّا أَمَانًى وَإِنْ هُمْ إِلَّا
يُظُنُّونَ

And some of them are illiterate; they know not the book but only (from) hearsay, and they do but conjecture (The Qur'an, 2 : 78).

What has been said in the above verses about some of the wandering Arabs and the Jewish converts to Islam is more or less true of some of the Muslims of our day. The unfortunate fact cannot be denied that some of us are Muslims only by accident of birth. Such Muslims do not "believe" but they only "submit" to Islam because of the social and cultural pressures of their environment.

In the early days of Islam, every Muslim — man or woman — sought light direct from the Holy Qur'an. Not so the Muslims of today, who have no time to read the Holy Book and depend for their knowledge of its teachings on the half-educated *Mullahs* or the theological teachers. Many of those who do read it do so in a spirit that the mere recitation of it is a meritorious act without any need for them to know its meaning with a view to acting upon it.

In my humble view, we Muslims of today need Islamization — not Modernization; for what we need is to be reminded of the golden principles and the noble teachings of the Holy Qur'an and the Islamic *Shari'ah*

(Law) which are capable of meeting any challenge from any source in any age.

Those who study this book carefully will, I hope, come to the conclusion and agree with me that what is needed by the Muslims today is primarily the true Islamic spirit — the force of conviction and belief — and then the resources of material power. As the Qur'anic prophecies tell us, without moral courage and the Islamic discipline, arms and ammunition are of no avail. The chronicle of the early Islamic defensive battles is full of instances where a handful of ill-equipped Muslims succeeded in putting to rout enemies who were far better equipped and were far superior in numbers. Contrary to that, our recent history is full of instances of tragic defeats incurred by the Muslims in spite of their material and numerical superiority over their adversaries. Who can deny the fact that the sole cause of such humiliating defeats has been the lack of spiritual and moral force?

During the early days of Islam, prophecies played a great part in keeping up the morale of the believers. When they saw the Qur'anic prophecies being fulfilled time and time again, their faith and spirit were revived and it was these qualities which helped them defeat great adversaries such as the two great empires of the Romans and the Persians. No historian, Muslim or non-Muslim, has ever suggested that those victories were due to any force of arms. They all attribute these miraculous successes of the early Muslims to their faith and spiritual force. If only we Muslims today had even a fraction of the same qualities and heeded the prophecies of the Holy Qur'an!

The prophecies in the Holy Qur'an regarding our present day are perhaps the greatest of all the prophecies. Their significance lies in the importance of our age in which man has made more material and scientific progress than he did during all his post-historic existence. At the same time, man is more unhappy and insecure these days than he ever was before. We live in a very dangerous age, more precarious than any other period in the history of mankind.

If the prophecies and the concomitant pieces of advice which have been given to us by the Holy Qur'an were heeded, we Muslims might have victory in our hands and not be in the pitiful and degrading state in which we find ourselves today.

It is very unfortunate that the intelligentsia in the Islamic world, and especially our political and social leaders, are in no way better in this respect than the common people. The religiously illiterate masses are excusable in at least so far that the problem is beyond their comprehension. But the leaders cannot be exonerated on this ground. Most of them are interested only in their personal power and glory — never content with their lot. The resources and energy of their régimes are being wasted in the pursuit of their personal ambitions while, in general, they have forgotten their religion as if they were above its discipline. Were such wretched people to follow the code and principles of Islam, they would succeed in bringing glory and success not only to their respective countries but also to themselves personally. Such people, however, remember their Alláh only when they fall a victim to the ever-occurring *coups d'état* or military take-overs. Then they cry that it was "the Will of Alláh". But it is not the Will of Alláh that brings defeat or disgrace to them. They bring their own down-fall by casting aside and neglecting the golden rules of conduct as laid down in the Holy Qur'án. They have little or no faith in their hearts to enable them to serve their people and to do something constructive for their country. Neither is it the "Will of Alláh" alone that will give them victory next time, for it is the destiny of man to strive and toil for himself and his beliefs and, thus, to invoke the help of Alláh. Only by hard work and striving with the heart and soul of a true believer can we regain the glory that was ours in the days gone by. Otherwise there is nothing that can stop us from sinking lower and lower until we reach the lowest depths of degradation.

I am greatly indebted to the following eminent authors for the knowledge obtained from their various books and the Qur'anic translations and commentaries, viz. A. Yúsuf 'Alí, the *Mualáná* Abul Kalám Azád, and Marmaduke Pickthall (an English Muslim), Háfiz Ghulám Sarwar, Muhammad 'Alí, the *Mualáná* 'Abdul Májid Daryábádí, Dr. Khádim Rahmání Núrí. Their translations and commentaries of the Holy Qur'án have proved invaluable to me, as have many more books written by: Dr. Muhammad Iqbál, Sayyid Ameer 'Alí, al-Hajj Qásim 'Alí Jairázbhoy, Muhammad 'Abduh, the Egyptian scholar, Dr. M. A. Dráz, 'Abd al-Rahman 'Azzám, Syed 'Abdul Latíf, Muhammad Asad (Leopold Weiss), a Muslim of Austrian extraction, and Dr. Mahmúd Muftic, a Yugoslav Muslim scientist. Of all the authors mentioned here, I believe that only the last four are alive, and I pray that the blessings of Alláh be upon those who have passed away.

Other journals and books, far too numerous to mention, by Muslim and non-Muslim writers, have also been a great help to me in my studies.

Last, but not the least, I am deeply indebted to my English-born wife, 'A'ishah, without whose help it would not have been possible for me to complete this book. All the writing and compiling work has been done by her.

The book is divided into two main parts. The first part concerns prophecies of the Holy Qur'án and the Bible; the second part deals with the sayings of our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace and blessings of Alláh be upon him!).

I now leave it to the reader to see whether or not these prophecies have been and are being fulfilled in our time. Even if I do not succeed in convincing my readers of their fulfilment and, thereby, in awakening my Muslim brethren to their duty and their faith, I shall at least have the spiritual satisfaction of having tried in my humble way. In writing this book I feel that I have made my small contribution to the service of Islam and the Muslims and that, as a Muslim, I have done my duty, leaving the results to Alláh.

It is with great reluctance that I have to mention that I have met the printing and other costs of the five successive editions of this book out of my own pocket, and that all the proceeds from the sale of the book have been going and will continue to go toward the propagation of Islam. My wife and I consider this expense as our humble contribution in the name of Alláh.

قُلْ كُلٌّ يَعْمَلُ عَلَىٰ شَاكِلَتِهِ ۖ فَرَبُّكُمْ أَعْلَمُ بِمَنْ
هُوَ أَهْدَىٰ سَبِيلًا ۝

Each one doth according to his rule of conduct. And thy Lord is best aware of him whose way is right (The Qur'án, 17 : 84).

IMPORTANT ADVICE TO OUR READERS

To Muslim readers who have not studied the Holy Qur'án fully, I would take the liberty of pointing out:

1. It is made quite clear in the Holy Qur'án that the Prophet Jesus (peace be on him!) was sent only to the Children of Israel; he had no responsibility whatsoever towards any other nation or people, least of all the Europeans—the Anglo-Saxons and the Russians (Slavs and Teutonic).

It is because of the controversy regarding the Prophet Jesus that the true implications of the Qur'anic prophecies concerning *Dajjál* have remained ambiguous to the Muslims for many generations.

2. The meaning of *al-Masíh al-Dajjál* has been explained in detail in the book. Literally it means "false *Masíh*" or Anti-Christ. I would like to point out at this stage that the word *Masíh* is the sacred title given by Alláh in the Holy Qur'án to the Prophet Jesus. The name of *al-Masíh al-Dajjál* was the term used by the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) when referring to *Dajjál*. The word *Dajjál* has been taken to mean by the Muslims as one person, a group of persons, a nation or a group of nations. All this has been explained at length in the book. Suffice it to say here that it stands for those whose function is to lead people astray from the path of virtue.

All the indications are that *Dajjál* is none other than the modern European nations in whom we find all the signs which have been given to us by our Holy Prophet.

3. *Dajjál* has also been named as *Yájúj* and *Májúj* (Gog and Magog).

4. The prophecies of the Holy Qur'án and *Hadíth* concerning *Yájúj* and *Májúj* and *Dajjál* have been interpreted by the earlier commentators in many different ways, each generation trying to apply the prophecies to its respective age. In this connection we must bear in mind that at the time when they were interpreted, no one could foresee the conditions that would prevail in our modern scientific and technological age. Today, when we study those prophecies in the light of what we are seeing in the world around us, we are left with no doubt that they apply to our modern age. It is this logical understanding that has prompted me to write this book.

5. Readers might wonder why the Europeans — the Anglo-Saxon and the Russian races — are being identified as *Dajjál* or *Yájúj* and *Májúj*. This becomes clear as one reads the history of these people of the time when the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) prophesied the coming of *Dajjál* and then we come to appreciate the reasons why he identified these nations as *Dajjál* and as *Yájúj* and *Májúj* (Gog and Magog). We will, for example, find that the religion of Christianity had spread but very little among the European nations at that time; for they were still dominated by the Roman Empire which had introduced various pagan religions from the east.

Eastern Europe and Russia accepted Christianity only about one thousand years ago and has started rejecting it in this century. As for Western Europe — the Anglo Saxons — Christianity is ending up fast as just a word without any meaning. The strange thing about Christianity is that its Bible, unlike other religious scriptures, was written down in a language completely alien to its origin. The mother tongue of the Prophet Jesus was Aramaic and Hebrew, but the first Bible was written in Greek.

6. The reader will come across in the book some strong criticism expressed in candid words. Although painful to me, it has been unavoidable in order to leave no element of doubt concerning the application and the fulfilment of these important prophecies. This criticism has not been directed against any particular faith or religion and especially not against Christianity as a religion. Our quarrel is against those European nations who are spreading their wrong ideology, culture and civilization and are upsetting the harmony of the world by their power-politics and, worst of all, they are doing this in the name of Christianity.

7. The Muslims of 1,400 years ago could never have dreamed or imagined that the Jews would return to Palestine or that the Anglo-Saxon and Russian races (Gog and Magog) would come to be a dominating figure in the Middle East. But today we see the Jews have returned to Palestine and are now in control of all the surrounding area. The Anglo-Saxon and Russian races are also a dominating figure in this area, having become deeply involved in the affairs of Israel and the Arab States, but in so doing they are bringing about their own destruction as foretold in the books of *Hadíth*, which fact has also been mentioned in the Shorters' *Encyclopaedia of Islam : They, Yájúj and Májúj (Gog and Magog), will be destroyed in the land of Israel*. How true have proved

the words of our Holy Prophet Muhammad (May the peace and blessings of Alláh be upon him) that we should see this prophecy fulfilled in our present day. (I have explained this more fully in the book.)

While reading this book, if the above points were borne in mind vis-à-vis the chaotic state of the world today, the message of the book and the explanations contained in it will be easier to understand. Perhaps it will also end much of the controversy and confusion which surrounds the various aspects of this subject.

'Alí Akbar,
"Seraj,"
17 Broadstairs Road,
Leckwith, Cardiff,
South Wales, U.K.

CONTENTS

Letters from readers of the book	...	...	...	...	...	...	Page
Preface	...	...	...	...	...	...	vii
Important advice to readers	...	...	...	...	...	...	xiii

CHAPTER 1

The Holy Prophet Muhammad Foretold in Ancient Scriptures	...	...	...	...	...	...	1
Prophecies in the Old Testament (Torah)	...	...	...	...	...	...	2
Prophecies in the New Testament. The Gospel of St. John	...	...	...	...	...	...	4
Prophecies in the Gospel of St. Barnabas	...	...	...	...	...	...	6
Prophecies in Buddhist Scriptures	...	...	...	...	...	...	7
Prophecies in Hindu Scriptures	...	...	...	...	...	...	8
Prophecy in Pársí Scriptures	...	...	...	...	...	...	10
Prophet Muhammad in <i>Hadith</i>	...	...	...	...	...	...	12

CHAPTER 2

Prophecies and Miracles of the Holy Qur'án (Comments by non-Muslims on the Holy Qur'án)	16
---	-----	-----	-----	-----	-----	-----	----

CHAPTER 3

Prophecies of the Holy Qur'án about the Early Islamic Period	29
--	-----	-----	-----	-----	-----	-----	----

CHAPTER 4

Prophecies of the Holy Qur'án about the Present	...	...	...	...	...	...	36
Effigies at Guildhall (Speech by Sir Winston Churchill)	...	...	...	...	...	...	36
Corruption in the land	...	...	...	...	...	...	36
A warning to the Jews	...	...	...	...	...	...	37
Jewish mentality and attitude towards non-Jews	...	...	...	...	...	...	38
The Jews cursed by their own Prophets	...	...	...	...	...	...	39
The Jews will return to Palestine for the third time with the help of <i>Dajjál</i>	...	...	...	...	...	...	41
Arabs will fight Jews	...	...	...	...	...	...	42
<i>Gog</i> and <i>Magog</i> will be destroyed in the land of Israel	...	...	...	...	...	...	43
Arabs will eventually be victorious over Jews	...	...	...	...	...	...	44
Jewish connection with C.I.A. and K.G.B. organizations	...	...	...	...	...	...	47
A warning to the Christians	...	...	...	...	...	...	49
The journey of <i>Dhú al-Qarnayn</i> and his contact with <i>Yájúj</i> and <i>Májúj</i> (<i>Gog</i> and <i>Magog</i>)	...	...	...	...	...	...	52
Severe warning to Christians	...	...	...	...	...	...	56
Europeans as great trading nations	...	...	...	...	...	...	57
When the camels are abandoned	...	...	...	...	...	...	59
Modern space travel and exploration	...	...	...	...	...	...	60
Reference to Atomic Warfare (Footnote page 60)	...	...	...	...	...	...	61
Interpretation of Allegorical verses	...	...	...	...	...	...	62
Christian enmity and hatred	...	...	...	...	...	...	63
No one will have the power to fight against <i>Yájúj</i> and <i>Májúj</i> (<i>Gog</i> and <i>Magog</i>)	...	...	...	...	...	...	64
The island of <i>Magog</i> and <i>Dajjál</i> identified as such	...	...	...	...	...	...	66

	Page
The reason for creating the state of Israel	66
The world would be turned into dust without herbage	68
The European nations identified as Gog and Magog	69
Appendix to chapter 4: Universal calamity would be brought about by the Western Christian nations	72

CHAPTER 5

Prophecies of the Holy Prophet Muhammad about the Present and the Future	74
Signs of <i>Dajjāl</i>	75
K.F.R. written on his forehead	77
Will revive the dead	77
Underneath him a white ass	78
Jumping about between Heaven and Earth	78
The sea will be ankle deep for him	78
No trial greater than that of <i>Dajjāl</i>	80
World's treasure will follow him	81
Christian nations will stand with 80 banners to make peace in the world, but they will betray the entire world	81
The last to follow <i>Dajjāl</i> will be women and illegitimate children	84
Will dominate all parts of the world	87
Will create doubt in the minds of people	87
Appendix to Chapter 5: Towards a Quaker view of sex	90

CHAPTER 6

The meaning of al-Masih al-Dajjāl or Antichrist	92
The meaning of <i>al-Masih al-Dajjāl</i> according to the Arabic Dictionary	92
Islam will prevail over all religions and how it will come about	97
Everything in the Universe has been made subservient to man	98
The meaning of <i>Yájúj</i> and <i>Májúj</i>	99
<i>Dajjāl</i> and <i>Yájúj</i> and <i>Májúj</i> are the same people	99
Appendix to Chapter 6: Christianity's spread by sword; Christian Missionaries and Empire builders	106

CHAPTER 7

Interpretation of the words <i>Dajjāl</i> and <i>Yájúj</i> and <i>Májúj</i> by earlier Muslim Commentators of the Books of Hadith, and new interpretation by author	107
<i>Dajjāl</i> living on an island	108
His hands and legs are in shackles	108
He will be of Jewish descent	109
He will come from the East	110
He will dominate the world in 40 days, and its meaning	113
<i>Dajjāl</i> cannot dominate Mecca and Medina	115
King Ibn Sa'ūd and Mecca and Medina	116
Muslims will fight <i>Dajjāl</i>	118
The popular view about Gog and Magog	118
The signs of Gog and Magog as interpreted by the author	118
The meaning of <i>Dābbah al-Ard</i> (Creature from the Earth)	119
A warning to Muslims	121

	Page
The interpretations of earlier Muslim Commentators regarding <i>Dābbah al-Ard</i> (Creature from the Earth)	122
Appendix to Chapter 7	122

CHAPTER 8

The Prophet Jesus	124
The controversy about the meaning of <i>Raf</i>	126
The pronouncement of al-Azar University, Cairo, about the Prophet Jesus Muhammad is the last Prophet	126
	127

CHAPTER 9

Basic dogmas of Christianity	129
Their scriptures have been tampered with by human hands	129
Belief in the Trinity analysed	129
Influence of ancient myths on Christian doctrines	131
Christians following in the wrong footsteps, falling into Jewish trap	135

CHAPTER 10

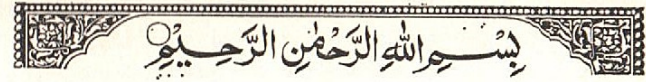
"Britain and the Muslims" by Mehdi Siddiqi (a Pakistani Muslim scholar) taken from an article in the <i>Muslimnews International</i> for April, 1969	136
--	-----

CHAPTER 11

"America's very special relationship with Israel" by David Nes, who spent 26 years in the United States Foreign Service, was also <i>Charge d'Affairs</i> in Cairo immediately before and during the 1967 war. (<i>The Times</i> , London, 5th February, 1971)	140
"Oh, America!" by Mr. Saqqáf, an Indian Muslim of Los Angeles, U.S.A. Article from <i>Radiance Viewsweekly</i> for 25th April, 1971	145

CHAPTER 12

"Muslims In Soviet Union." Article from <i>Radiance Viewsweekly</i> , Delhi, India, for 29th August, 1971	150
Conclusion	155



CHAPTER 1

*The Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!)
Foretold in Ancient Scriptures*

According to the Holy Qur'an, the advent of the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) was foretold in the earlier religious scriptures. But before quoting from these ancient scriptures, I would like to give only two references from the Holy Qur'an in this respect.

الَّذِينَ يَتَّبِعُونَ الرَّسُولَ النَّبِيَّ
الْأُمِّيَّ الَّذِي يَجِدُونَهُ مَكْتُوبًا عِنْدَهُمْ فِي
التَّوْرَةِ وَالْإِنْجِيلِ

Those who follow the Messenger-Prophet, the Ummi (unlettered) whom they find mentioned in the Torah (the Old Testament) and the Gospel. (The Qur'an. 7 : 157.)

وَإِذْ
أَخَذَ اللَّهُ مِيثَاقَ النَّبِيِّينَ لَئِن آتَيْنَاكُمْ مِنْ كِتَابٍ
وَحِكْمَةٍ ثُمَّ جَاءَكُمْ رَسُولٌ مُصَدِّقٌ لِمَا مَعَكُمْ
لَتُؤْمِنُنَّ بِهِ وَلَتَنْصُرُنَّهُ قَالَ أَأَقْرَرْتُمْ وَأَخَذْتُمْ
عَلَىٰ ذُلِكُمْ إِصْرِي قَالُوا أَقْرَرْنَا قَالَ فَاشْهَدُوا
وَأَنَا مَعَكُمْ مِنَ الشَّاهِدِينَ ﴿٨٠﴾

And when Alláh made a covenant through the prophets: Certainly what I have given you of Book and Wisdom — then a Messenger comes to you verifying that which is with you, you shall believe in him, and you shall aid him. He said: Do you affirm and accept My compact in this (matter)? They said: We do affirm. He said: Then bear witness, and I (too) am bearer of witness with you. (The Qur'an, 3 : 80.)

The claim is advanced here in the Holy Qur'an that all the prophets had prophesied the advent of a world Prophet, who, in his turn, would verify the truth of all the prophets who had appeared in the world before him.

Prophecies in the Old Testament (Torah)

There are many prophecies regarding the Holy Prophet, both in the Old and the New Testaments. Deuteronomy, the Book of Moses, speaks very clearly of the rising of a prophet (who shall be the like of Moses) from among the brethren of Israelites, i.e. the Ishmaelites or the Arabs. The passage in question reads:

ORIGINAL HEBREW TEXT

יִבְרֵא מִקִּרְבְּךָ מֵאַחֶיךָ מִ
 16 בְּמִנִּי יָקִים לְךָ יְהוָה אֱלֹהֶיךָ אִלּוּ תִשְׁמָעוּן: כָּלֹל אֲשֶׁר-
 שְׂאֵלָתָּ מֵעַם יְהוָה אֱלֹהֶיךָ בְּהֹרֵב בְּיָוִם הַקֹּהֵל לֵאמֹר
 לֹא אִסָּף לְשִׁמּוֹן אֶת-קוֹל יְהוָה אֱלֹהֵי וְאַתְּהָאשׁ הַגָּדֹלָה
 17 הַזֹּאת לֹא-אַרְאֶה עוֹד וְלֹא אֶמּוֹת: וַיֹּאמֶר יְהוָה אֵלַי
 18 הִיטִיבוּ אֲשֶׁר דִּבַּרְוּ: נִבְרָא אֲקִים לָהֶם מִקִּרְבָּם אֶחָדָם
 כְּמֹדָ וְנִתְּנִי דְבָרִי בְּפִיו וְדִבַּר אֲלֵיהֶם אֶת כָּל-אֲשֶׁר
 אֶצְוֶה:

Deut XVIII, 15-18

Translation:

"The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him shall ye harken. According to all that thou desiredst of the Lord thy God in Horeb in the day of assembly, saying, Let me not hear again the voice of the Lord my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, that I die not. And the Lord said unto me, They have well said that which they have spoken. I will raise them up a prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and I will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him." (Deuteronomy, 18: 15-18.)

In the above-quoted passage our Prophet is evidently foretold. For God declared to all the Israelites that He would raise up a Prophet from among their brethren. Now we hesitate not to affirm that it is impossible that the phrase "brethren of Israel" could have any meaning other than that of Ishmaelites, and these never have had any prophet but Muhammad (peace be on him!). It is admitted both by Jews and Christians that revelations to the Israelitish Prophets were not made in the very words as given in the Scriptures, and that it is only their purport which they afterwards delivered to the people in their own language. But the Holy Qur'an, on the contrary, was revealed to our Holy Prophet word by word as it now is, a fact which makes the expression "and will put my words in his mouth" inapplicable to anyone except Muhammad. (Peace be on him!)

In promising to raise up a prophet, God tells Moses, "I will raise up a prophet from among their brethren." But, according to Deuteronomy 34: 10, there did not arise a prophet since from among Israel who was like unto Moses. There cannot remain any doubt about the fact that the promised prophet must have been Muhammad (peace be on him!) who was from among the Ishmaelites, the brethren of the Israelites.

Another prophecy of the Prophet Isaiah...

ORIGINAL HEBREW TEXT

685 JESAJA CAP. 21. 22. כֹּה נֶאֱמַר
 יִרְאֶה רֶכֶב 7
 אִמֵּר פָּרָשִׁים רֶכֶב חֲמֹר רֶכֶב וְגַם יִהְיֶה קוֹשֵׁב קָשָׁב רֶכֶב
 קָשָׁב:
 Isaiah XXI, 7.

Translation:

"He saw two riders, one of them was a rider upon an ass, and the other a rider upon a camel, he harkened diligently with much heed."

It was Isaiah who saw the two riders in a vision. In our opinion the above passage is the faithful rendering of the original Hebrew. In the English Bible, however, it is translated thus: "He saw a chariot of asses and a chariot of camels, etc."

The Vulgate has it as follows: "*He saw a chariot of two horsemen, a rider upon an ass and a rider upon a camel, etc.*"

There can be no doubt that of the two riders mentioned by the Prophet Isaiah as being the restorers of the true worship of the Godhead, the rider upon the ass is Jesus Christ, because he so made his entry into Jerusalem, and that by the rider of a camel is meant the Prophet of Arabia, of which country the camel is the common means of conveyance. It is an historical fact that after conquering Mecca, the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) entered into the Holy City riding on a camel, with ten thousand of his followers behind him.

Prophecies in the New Testament:

The Gospel of St. John.

PROPHECIES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

The Ahmad of Messiah

ORIGINAL GREEK TEXT

15 ἂν ἀπαύτῃ με, τὰς ἐντολὰς τὰς ἐμὰς τηρήσετε.
 16 καὶ γὰρ ἐρωτήσω τὸν Πατέρα καὶ ἄλλον Παράκλητον
 17 δώσει ὑμῖν ἵνα ᾗ μεθ' ὑμῶν εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα,
 18 ταῦτα λελάληκα ὑμῖν παρ' ὑμῶν 25
 μένων· ὁ δὲ Παράκλητος, τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ Ἅγιον 26
 ὃ πέμψει ὁ Πατήρ ἐν τῷ ὀνόματί μου, ἐκεῖνος
 ὑμᾶς διδάξει πάντα καὶ ὑπομνήσει ὑμᾶς πάντα
 ἃ εἶπον ὑμῖν ἐγώ.
 7 ἀλλ' ἐγὼ τὴν ἀλή-
 θειαν λέγω ὑμῖν, συμφέροι ὑμῖν ἵνα ἐγὼ ἀπέλθω,
 ἵνα γὰρ μὴ ἀπέλθω, ὁ Παράκλητος οὐ μὴ ἐλθῇ
 πρὸς ὑμᾶς· ἐάν δὲ πορευθῶ, πέμψω αὐτὸν πρὸς
 8 ὑμᾶς, καὶ ἐλθὼν ἐκεῖνος ἐλέγξει τὸν κόσμον
 περὶ ἁμαρτίας καὶ περὶ δικαιοσύνης καὶ περὶ
 9 κρίσεως· περὶ ἁμαρτίας μὲν, ὅτι οὐ πιστεύουσιν
 10 εἰς ἐμέ· περὶ δικαιοσύνης δέ, ὅτι πρὸς τὸν Πατέρα.
 11 ὑπάγω καὶ οὐκέτι θεωρεῖτέ με· περὶ δὲ κρίσεως,
 12 ὅτι ὁ ἄρχων τοῦ κόσμου τούτου κέκριται. Ἐτι
 13 πολλὰ ἔχω ὑμῖν λέγειν, ἀλλ' οὐ δύνασθε βαστά-
 14 ζειν ἅρτι· ὅταν δὲ ἐλθῇ ἐκεῖνος, τὸ Πνεῦμα τῆς
 ἀληθείας, ὁδηγήσει ὑμᾶς εἰς τὴν ἀλήθειαν πᾶσαν·
 οὐ γὰρ λαλήσει ἄφ' ἑαυτοῦ, ἀλλ' ὅσα ἀκούει λα-
 λέσει, καὶ τὰ ἐρχόμενα ἀναγγελεῖ ὑμῖν.

Translation:

"If ye love me ye will keep my commandments. And I will pray to the Father and he shall give you another Parakletos (Comforter) that he may be with you for ever. These things have I spoken unto you while yet abiding with you. But the Comforter (Parakletos) which is the spirit of truth whom the Father will send . . . he shall teach you all things and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I said unto you. (John, 14: 15; 16; 25; 26.)

"Nevertheless I tell you the truth. It is expedient for you that I go away, for if I go not away, the Comforter (Parakletos) will not come unto you . . . And he, when he is come, will convict the world in respect of sin and of righteousness and of judgment. I have yet many things to say to you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of Truth is come, he shall guide you into all the truth for he shall not speak from himself, but what things soever he shall hear, these shall he speak and he shall declare unto you the things that are to come." (John, 16: 7, 8, 12, 13.)

We have not the least doubt that the word Perikalutas rendered in English as *Comforter* was not the one uttered by Jesus Christ, but that it was *Parakletos*, meaning *illustrious* or *renowned*, answering in every respect to the Arabic word *Ahmad*. Sir William Muir, however, says that the word Ahmad "must have been erroneously employed as a translation of Perikalutas in some Arabic version of the New Testament", and that Parakletos (illustrious) for Perikalutas was forged by some "ignorant or designing monk in Muhammad's time." (Muir, *Life of Mahomet*.)

With regard to the name of Ahmad, the Holy Qur'an says:

وَأَذِّنْ
 قَالَ عِيسَى ابْنُ مَرْيَمَ بَيْنِي وَبَيْنَكَ إِسْرَءِيلَ إِنِّي رَسُولُ
 اللَّهِ إِلَيْكُمْ مُّصَدِّقًا لِّمَا بَيْنَ يَدَيَّ مِنَ التَّوْرَةِ
 وَمُبَشِّرًا بِرَسُولٍ يَأْتِي مِنْ بَعْدِي اسْمُهُ أَحْمَدُ ط

"And when Jesus, son of Mary, said, O Children of Israel, surely I am the messenger of Alláh to you, verifying that which is before me of the Torah and giving the good news of a Messenger who will come after me, his name being Ahmad." (The Qur'an, 61: 6.)

It is a well-known fact that, from a very early period, a person was expected by Christians in great numbers in accordance with the prophecy, which shows that the construction put on the passage in the Acts by the Roman Church and by the Protestants was not general.

Of this, Montanus, in the second century, earlier than Tertullian, furnishes an example, as he was considered by his followers to be the promised person.

Prophecies in the Gospel of St. Barnabas

Here I would like to point out to Muslim readers that Christians do not regard the Gospel of St. Barnabas as an integral part of the New Testament and it is not often preached in their churches. This Gospel was condemned by the Christian Council 300 years before the birth of the Prophet Muhammad (peace be upon him!). The reason for this is, no doubt, that the advent of the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) is predicted in it in very clear words.

"Then," said the Priest, "how shall the Comforter be called and what sign shall reveal his coming?"

Jesus answered: "The name of the Comforter is Admirable; for God himself gave him the name when He had created his soul, and placed it in Celestial splendour. God said: Wait Muhammad, for thy sake I will create Paradise, the world, and a great multitude of creatures, whereof I make thee a present, in so much that who shall bless thee, shall be blessed, and who so shall curse thee, shall be accursed. When I shall send thee unto the world, I shall send thee as My Messenger of salvation, and thy word shall be true, in so much that heaven and earth shall fail, but thy faith shall never fail."

Muhammad is his Blessed name.

Then the crowd lifted up their voices saying: O God, send us thy messenger. O Muhammad, come quickly for the salvation of the world. (From the Gospel of St. Barnabas. Edited and translated from the Italian manuscript in the Imperial Library at Vienna by Lonsdale and Laura Ragg, Oxford, 1907.)

It is thus Jesus who was the last Prophet to foretell the advent of the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!). Relating to the above quotation regarding Jesus, the Holy Qur'án says:

وَجَعَلْنَاهَا آيَةً لِلْعَالَمِينَ ﴿٩١﴾

And (Alláh made her (Mary) and her son, a sign for the nations. (The Qur'án, 21:91.)

Alláh then says to Muhammad in the Holy Qur'án:

الْيَوْمَ اكْمَلْتُ لَكُمْ دِينَكُمْ وَأَتِمَمْتُ عَلَيْكُمْ
نِعْمَتِي وَرَضِيتُ لَكُمُ الْإِسْلَامَ دِينًا

"This day have I perfected for you your religion, and completed My favour to you, and chosen for you Islam as a religion." (The Qur'án, 5:3.)

Prophecies in the Buddhist Scriptures

I would remind my readers that the Buddhist Scriptures have been written in more than one language, so I have chosen the following translation extracts from the Ceylon sources.

Ananda said to the Blessed One, "Who shall teach us when thou art gone?"

And the Blessed One replied: "I am not the first Buddha who came upon the earth, nor shall I be the last. In due time another Buddha will arise in the world, a holy one, a supremely enlightened one, endowed with wisdom in conduct, auspicious, knowing the universe, an incomparable leader of men, a master of angels and mortals. He will reveal to you the same eternal truths which I have taught you. He will preach his religion, glorious in its origin, glorious at the climax, and, glorious at the goal. He will proclaim a religious life, wholly perfect and pure, such as I now proclaim. His disciples will number many thousands, while mine number many hundreds."

Ananda said, "How shall we know him?"

The Blessed One replied, "He will be known as Maitreya . . ."

The above quotation is somewhat controversial. As you can see that the Buddha predicted that the Blessed One will come, and in the language of the Buddhist Scriptures the word for him is Maitreya meaning A Mercy and The Blessed One.

After the death of the Buddha, his followers attempted to identify some of their spiritual leaders as the *Maitreya*. The Christians also sought to identify Jesus as the *Maitreya*. The Hindus did the same with certain of their spiritual leaders.

Anyone making an unbiased study of the question must come to the conclusion that no one other than the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) fills this position of the *Maitreya*.

The Holy Qur'an has repeatedly called Muhammad (peace be on him!) as "a mercy to all the nations" which is, as I said before, the exact translation of *Maitreya*.

وَمَا أَرْسَلْنَاكَ إِلَّا رَحْمَةً لِّلْعَالَمِينَ ۝

"We have not sent thee O Muhammad, but as a Mercy to all the nations." (The Qur'an, 21:107.)

The Holy Prophet himself said:

"I have not been sent for cursing but as one invited (unto God) and a Mercy."

If any reader is interested in obtaining more details, he can find them in *Muhammad in Parsi, Hindoo and Buddhist Scriptures*, by A. Vidyarathi and U. 'Alí. Published by Abbas Manzil Library, Allahabad 3, India.

Prophecies in Hindu Scriptures

In Hindu scriptures, too, there are a good many prophecies about the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) A few of these are in the *Puránás*. The one in the *Bhavishya Puráná* is the clearest of all. The fifth word from left to right is the name of our Holy Prophet. It gives even the name of the country of the Prophet, "*Marusthalnivasinan*", i.e. the inhabitant of the desert (Arabia). The Arya Samaj, a sect of Hindus, has tried to cast doubt on the authenticity of this *Puráná*. The reason for their doing so seems to be no other than that it contains a reference to the Prophet. According to the Sanatanist Pandits and the vast bulk of Hindus, nevertheless, it is considered very authentic.

The prophecy runs as follows:

ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXT

पुनश्चिन्ततां स्वेच्छां प्रावासेण समन्वितः ॥ महामद इति ख्यातः शिष्यशासनासमन्वितः ॥ ५ ॥ नृपमेव महादेव महस्थलनिवासिनम् ॥
गोत्रादेश उवाच परावृत्तमन्त्रितः ॥ वेदनादिभिर्मन्त्र्यं तुष्टाव मनसा हरम् ॥ ६ ॥ ॥ योजराज उवाच ॥ ॥ नमस्तो गिरिजानाथ
महस्थलनिवासिने ॥ विष्णुहस्ताग्राय बहुमायावर्तिने ॥ ७ ॥ मन्त्रेणैवैवायं शुद्धाय सच्चिदानन्दरूपिणे ॥ त्वं मां हि किञ्चन विद्धि शरणार्थं
सुतागतम् ॥ ८ ॥

Translation:

Just then an illiterate man with the epithet of Teacher, Mahammad by name, came along with his companions. Raja (Bhoja in a vision) to that Great Deva, the denizen of Arabia, purifying with the Ganges water and with the five things of cow offered sandal wood and pay worship to him. O denizen of Arabia and Lord of the Holies to thee is my adoration. O thou who has found many ways and means to destroy all the devils of the world! O pure one from among the illiterates, O sinless one, the spirit of truth and absolute master, to thee is my adoration! Accept me at thy feet. (Bhavishya Puráná Parv 3, Khand 3, Adhya 3, Shalok 5-8.)

And again,

ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXT

॥ अथर्ववेदे २० । ११० ॥
॥ अथ कुलापसृष्टावि ॥
इदं जना उपं श्रुत नारायणं स्तुविष्यते । ॥ ११० ॥
पृष्टिं सहस्रां नवतिं च कीरम् सा रुशमेषु ददाहे ॥ १ ॥
उष्ट्रा यस्य प्रवाहिणो बभूवन्तो विदेशं ।
वर्ष्मा रथस्य नि जिहीयते दिव ईषमाय उपस्मृणः ॥ २ ॥
एष अर्धमे मासहे शतं निष्कान्दश स्रजः ।
कीरिणं शताव्ययतां सहस्रा दश गोनाम् ॥ ३ ॥ (१)

Translation:

O people, listen to this emphatically! The man of praise [Muhammad] will be raised among the people. We take the emigrant in our shelter from sixty thousand and ninety enemies whose conveyances are twenty camels and she camels, whose loftiness of position touches the heaven and lowers it.

He gave to Mamah Rishi hundreds of gold coins, ten circles, three hundred Arab horses and ten thousand cows. (Atharva Veda, Kanda 20, Sukta 127, Mantra 1-3.)

Prophecy in the Parsi Scriptures

The Parsi religion is one of the oldest religions in the world, perhaps as old if not older than, the Hindu religion. It has two collections of Scriptures — the *Dasâtîr* and the *Zand Avasta*, which may be called respectively the Old and the New Testaments of the Parsi religion. In the *Dasâtîr*, No. 14, which is associated with the name of Sasanll, there is not only a corroboration of the Doctrines and Teachings of Islam, but a clear prophecy as to the advent of the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!). The prophecy is made in the clearest terms, and is preceded by a vision of a state of extreme disorder and demoralization in Persia.

It runs thus:

ORIGINAL PAHLAVI

چرخیم که جام کنیز تو را بجام درناه جبال بود و میز را نهادم و بوییز ناک -
و نیز ناک و سیراک و امیراک اسویم آمد و چونده و رگام تو دام و
برین خوشای نیار و سیراکوار آبادی جوارده خوشنا و
و دهامندشای سارام دیرد انورام دام و نغود و ناک و شایام شنند و

387

MODERN PERSIAN

چون چلیں کارھا لے لہ لڑائی سر عیبہا شودہ لہ لڑائی او دیہو لکھ وکھو
والی ہمہ برانڈہ و مرنہ سرکاش پڑستان سینیدہ بجائی پیکر لہ و تھی کہ خانہ آباد
ہ پیکر شہہ نماز بریں و..... رجا ستا لہہ جا آشی کہ ہما دشی و گردہ آب و
تس و بلہ و جاہا بزرگ پس اٹلہہ درمہ دنا یا ا لڑاں و ہ گرہا درایشاں و رنہ۔

Translation:

"When the Persians should sink so low in morality, a man will be born in Arabia whose followers will upset their throne, religion and everything. The mighty stiff-necked ones of Persia will be overpowered. The house which was built (referring to the building of Ka'bah originally built by the Prophet Abraham) and in which many idols have been placed will be purged of idols, and people will say their prayers facing towards it. His followers will capture the towns of the Parris and Taus and Balkh and other big places round about. People will embroil with one another. The wise men of Persia and others will join his followers."

This prophecy is contained in a book which has forever been in the custody of the Parsis, and its words do not admit of two interpretations. The coming man is to be an Arab. The Persians would join his faith. Fire temples would be destroyed. Idols would be removed. People would say their prayers facing towards the *Ka'bah*. Can this prophecy fit in with any person other than Muhammad (peace be on him!)?

Muslims who have little or no knowledge of other religions may be surprised to find the advent of the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) predicted in the Hindu, Parsi and Buddhist scriptures in spite of the fact that these people worship the cow, fire, sun, nature and idols. But Muslims must remember that in the Holy Qur'án Alláh says that every nation has had its prophets and, therefore, all their original scriptures were Divine-inspired. I give here three of the verses of the Holy Qur'án throwing light on this subject:

وَأَنَّ مِنْ أُمَّةٍ إِلَّا خَلَا فِيهَا نَذِيرٌ ﴿٢٣﴾

“And there is not a people but a warner has gone among them.”
(The Qur’án, 35:24.)

وَلِكُلِّ أُمَّةٍ رَّسُولٌ

"And for every nation there is a messenger." (The Qur'án, 10: 47.)

وَرُسُلًا قَدْ
قَصَصْنَاهُمْ عَلَيْكَ مِنْ قَبْلُ وَرُسُلًا لَمْ نَقْصُصْهُمْ
عَلَيْكَ ط

“And (We sent) messengers We have mentioned to thee before, and messengers We have not mentioned to thee.” (The Qur’án, 4: 164.)

According to a *Hadith*, the Holy Prophet said that there were 124,000 prophets sent before him, and a Muslim must respect all of them equally and make no distinction between them. (However, the exact number of prophets is not known for certain.)

Thus, while on the one hand, the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) testified to the truth of all the other prophets belonging to all the different nations of the world and made it a part of faith in Islam, on the other hand, the Scriptures of these previous prophets are found to contain clear prophecies about the advent of our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!). This mutual corroboration, by furnishing a great evidence of the spiritual providence of God for humanity, strengthens people's faith in religion in general, and in the religion of Islam in particular.

Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) in Hadith

In the well authenticated books of Hadith — the *Sahih* of Bukhari, Tirmizi's the *Shamail*, Ibn Hanbal's the *Musnad*, the *Sahih* of Muslim — we may find some wonderful pen-portraits of our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!).

The Prophet's height was neither too tall nor too short. When he walked by himself, people said he was short-statured; whereas, when he walked with another, the Prophet seemed to be the taller of the two. The Prophet would say that the medium height was the best.

The Prophet's complexion was white, without being wheat-coloured or too white—the colour that is pure white, free from any mixture of yellow, red or any other colour.

Some have described the Prophet's complexion as being ruddy and, in order to be consistent, have said that the parts exposed to the air and sun, such as the face, neck and ears, were reddish, while the parts covered by his clothes were pure white.

The hair of the Prophet was curly and did not hang straight down; yet it was not bushy. When the Prophet combed his locks, there was in them a wavy appearance. They say his hair flowed down to his shoulder. It is frequently stated to have reached the lobes of his ears. Sometimes he would part his hair into two locks, one on each side of the ear. At other times he would comb his hair above his ears, so that his neck could be seen bare. His face was more handsome than that of others; he who described the Prophet's face always compared it with the full moon. And because his skin was fair, the Prophet's anger and cheer could be

discerned from his countenance. And the people said of him that he was as he is described by his friend, Abu Bakr, in the couplet below:

*As there is no darkness in moonlit night
So is Mustafá,¹ the well-wisher, bright.*

The forehead of the Prophet was wide and the eyebrows were thin and full. Between the eyebrows there was a silvery lustre. The eyes of the Prophet were large and open, deep and dark, with a tint of redness. His eyelashes were long and so thick that they looked as if they were about to meet. His nose sloped downward in just proportion; his teeth were a little interspaced and shining. His lips were beautiful and fascinating. His cheeks were not soft, but firm. His face was neither long nor circular, but slightly rounded. His beard was thick. His moustache he wore clipped. The neck of the Prophet was more beautiful than that of other men; it was neither long nor short. The part of it which was exposed to the sun and air looked like an urn of silver chased with gold. In turning his face, he would also turn his whole body. His breast was broad and no part of it seemed more prominent than the rest. Its surface was even and clear and smooth. From the thorax to the navel there was a thin line of hair. There was no hair besides. Both the shoulders of the Prophet were broad and thickly overgrown with hair. His shoulders, ankles and armpits were well-covered with flesh. His back was broad and near his right shoulder-blade was a mark like a seal and in it there was a black mole, somewhat yellowish, round which there was some thick hair. Both his hands and arms were fleshy; his wrists long and his palms broad. His hands and feet were broad and wide-set. His fingers were as if they were phalanges of silver. His palms were soft, even as velvet, and filled with scent like the palm of a perfumer. His thighs and calves were fleshy. His body was moderately stout, but even in his old age it remained muscular and sinewy, as if it were re-born. His gait was firm; his step steadfast. In walking he leaned forward and kept his paces close together.

His countenance was mild and pensive. His laugh was rarely more than a smile. In his habits he was extremely simple, although he bestowed great care on his person. His eating and drinking, his dress and his furniture retained, even when he had reached the fullness of power, their almost primitive nature. He cared the most for his arms, which he highly prized, and a pair of yellow boots, a present from the *Negus* of Abyssinia.

¹ One of the epithets which the Muslims gave to the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!). The word means "the Chosen one".

Perfumes, however, he loved passionately, being most sensitive to smells. Alcohol he abhorred.

He was gifted with mighty powers of imagination, elevation of mind, delicacy and refinement of feeling. "He is more modest than a virgin behind her curtain" — it was said of him. He was most indulgent to his inferiors, and would never allow his little page to be scolded whatever he did. Anas, his servant, said of him, "Ten years I was with the Prophet and he never said as much as 'uff' to me." He was very affectionate towards his family. One of his boys died in his arms in the smoky house of the nurse, a blacksmith's wife. He was very fond of children; he would stop them in the streets and pat their little heads. He never struck anyone in his life. The worst expression he ever made use of in conversation was, "What has come to him? May his forehead become darkened with mud!" When asked to curse someone he replied, "I have not been sent to curse, but as a mercy to mankind." He visited the sick, followed any bier he met, accepted the invitations to dinner even of slaves, mended his own clothes, milked the goats, and waited upon himself. He never first withdrew his hand out of another man's palm, and turned not before the other had turned.

He was the most faithful protector of those he protected, the sweetest and most agreeable in conversation. Those who saw him were suddenly filled with reverence: those who came in contact with him loved him; those who described him would say, "I have never seen his like". He was of great taciturnity, but when he spoke it was with emphasis and deliberation, and no one could forget what he said.

The Prophet would say that he was more like Adam than other men, while in morals and disposition he resembled his father, Abraham.

The day of Muhammad's (peace be on him!) greatest triumph over his enemies was also the day of his greatest victory over himself.

He freely forgave the Quraysh all the years of sorrow and cruel scorn with which they had afflicted him and gave an amnesty to the whole population of Mecca. Only four criminals whom justice had condemned made up Muhammad's (peace be on him!) proscription list when he entered as a conqueror to the city of his bitterest enemies. The army followed his example and entered Mecca quietly and peacefully; no house

was robbed, no woman insulted. One thing alone suffered destruction. Going to the Ka'bah, Muhammad (peace be on him!) stood before each of the three hundred and sixty idols and pointed to it with his staff, saying, "Truth has come and falsehood has fled away!" and at these words his companions hewed them down. All the idols and household gods in Mecca and around Mecca were destroyed.

It was thus that Muhammad (peace be on him!) entered his native city. Throughout the annals of conquest there is no triumphant entry comparable to this one.

Prophecies and Miracles of the Holy Qur'an

Before starting to read this chapter, I would request my Muslim readers to know that my criticism of miracles, especially those performed by Jesus Christ, is only on the Christian conception of the supernatural element in the field of religion as depicted by the Gospels. "Miracles" and the supernatural phenomena are a highly controversial subject. It is not within the scope of this small book to deal with it and, therefore, I am dealing with this subject only so far as it concerns us here.

In my studies of all the previous religions I have come to the conclusion that the essence of their teachings is in miracles. Even Muslims in large numbers have been influenced by the conceptions of other religions. In my studies of the Holy Qur'an I find that it claims only one miracle, and that is the Qur'an itself.

The word used in the Holy Qur'an for miracle is *ayah*, the primary meaning of which is *an apparent sign or mark by which a thing is known* (cf. Rāghib, *al-Mufradāt*). In the Holy Qur'an, it generally carries one of the two significations, *an indication, evidence or proof*, and a *Divine message or communication*. In the first sense, it includes the miracle in its meaning, and in the second sense it stands for the Holy Qur'an as a whole or even a part of it. The adoption of the same word to indicate a Divine message as well as its proof is noteworthy. It shows that the Divine message itself is first and foremost the proof of its own truth, and hence it is that the Holy Qur'an has always been looked upon by all Muslims as the greatest miracle of the Holy Prophet. And it is indeed the greatest miracle ever given to a prophet because it stands in need of no external evidence whatsoever as a support, but is itself a living proof of its own truth for all time.

Christian writers on Islam are generally of opinion that though the Holy Qur'an records certain miracles of other prophets, it denies that any signs were vouchsafed to the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) save and except the Holy Qur'an. It is true that the Qur'anic conception of miracles is quite different from that of the Christian. In

Christianity, miracles are all in all. Not only do they take the place of argument but the central doctrine of the Christian religion is itself based on an alleged miracle. For what is the rising of Jesus from the dead but a miracle? Yet if Jesus did not rise from the dead, the pillar on which the whole structure of Christianity rests crashes to the ground and this is what is happening in the western world today. European intellectuals in majority are refusing to accept the supernatural in religion and, hence, their rejection of Christianity. The basic doctrine of Christianity thus being a miracle, it is not surprising that, in the Gospels, miracles take the place not only of argument, but also of religious duties, moral teachings and spiritual awakening. The dead are made to rise from the graves; multitudes of the sick are healed; sight is restored to the blind; the lame are made to walk; the deaf to hear; water is turned into wine; devils are cast out and many other supernatural deeds are done.

Though the Gospels lay so much stress on miracles, the whole force of the argument of miracles, if there be any argument, is taken away by two outstanding facts. In the first place, similar miracles were, according to the Gospels, worked even by the opponents of Jesus Christ; for he is himself made to say: "And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out?" (Matthew 12:27; Luke 11:19). The disciples of the Pharisees could therefore work the miracles which Jesus did. And again, he is reported as saying: "Many will say to me in that day, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? And in thy name have cast out devils? And in thy name done many wonderful works?" (Matthew 7:22). Even false Christs could work the miracles which Jesus showed: "For there shall arise false Christs and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders" (Matthew 24:24). And, secondly, there was a healing pool of those days: "Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches. In these lay a great multitude of impotent, blind, halt, withered folk, waiting for the moving of the water. For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had" (John 5:24). If miracles were so cheap in those days, if even the disciples of the Pharisees and the iniquitous and false Messiahs could perform the self-same miracles which the "Son of God" was performing, if there was such a miraculous pool, what divine source could these miracles possibly claim?

Yet another consideration makes the evidence of the Gospel miracles worthless. The miraculous in a prophet's life is needed to assure the people to whom he is sent of the truth of his message, and to convince the ordinary mind that some supernatural power is at his back. The question therefore arises: supposing Jesus wrought the miracles which are recorded of him in the Gospels, what was the effect produced by those miracles? Certainly if such wonderful deeds were done, the masses ought to have followed him without hesitation. But the Gospels tell us that though multitudes of the sick followed him and were healed, and though faith was a condition precedent to healing, yet Jesus never had multitudes of disciples. His following was scanty, perhaps no more than five hundred men. His own disciples also did not show in any marked degree the effect of the miraculous upon their lives. Of the twelve especially chosen disciples, one turned traitor; another cursed Jesus and the rest all fled, leaving the master in a sad plight. Therefore, even if Jesus did work miracles, as claimed in the Christian Gospels, they seem never to have fulfilled the object for which miraculous power is vouchsafed to the prophets.

The impression one gains from the Christian Gospels is that the great object before the reformer is not to bring about a transformation by infusing faith in God in the mind of man; and that conviction of the truth is sought, not by argument or appeal to reason, but by overawing the mind by the miraculous.

The followers of Moses, with all his miracles, also had no great regard for their liberator. They would not listen to him on his way to the Promised Land. According to the Holy Qur'an, they said to Moses:

قَالُوا يَبْنَؤُا إِيَّائِي إِنْ كُنْ كَذَّابًا فَهَذَا أَبَدًا
مَا دَامُوا فِيهَا فَادْهَبْ أَنْتَ وَرَبُّكَ فَقَاتِلَا إِنَّا
لَهُنَا قَعْدُونَ ﴿٢٧﴾

"O Moses, we will never enter it so long as they (the tribe of Amalekites) are in it; go therefore thou and thy Lord, and fight; surely here we sit." (The Qur'an, 5: 24.)

One cannot imagine the companions of the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) taking such an attitude with their own prophet.

On the battlefield of Uhud, the Holy Prophet, being hard pressed by the force of the enemy, fell into a pit. He had received eighty wounds, his face weltered in blood and his very life was in danger, but the unprecedented devotion of his followers came to his rescue. The Prophet was in the pit and a sure prey for the enemy, should they find him; the only thing in the nature of a fortification which could save him at the moment was a lining-wall of human beings which his companions made. They stood around the pit and exposed themselves to the arrows of the enemy which pierced the bodies of this human rampart and did not reach the body of the Prophet. As the members of this living fortification fell dead one after another, their places were filled in by others. Women were not behindhand in showing their devotion to the Prophet on this occasion; for Umm Nusaybah drew her sword and her example was followed by Umm Salmah, 'A'ishah and others, who made an onslaught on the enemy and can rightly claim to have saved the situation in the nick of time. The companions of the Prophet used to sing the following as their war-cry: "We are that very people that have pledged themselves to Muhammad to fight in the defence of our faith throughout our lives." Many occasions came and each time they proved true to their words, making each occasion a glory both for the Teacher and the Taught.

The conception of the miracle, as given by the Holy Qur'an, is quite different. Here the supreme object before the Prophet is to effect a moral and spiritual transformation; the means adopted are an appeal to the reasoning faculty, as well as to the heart of man to convince him that the Divine message is meant for his own uplift. Lessons drawn from history are to show how the acceptance of truth has always benefited man in the past and that its rejection has worked to his own detriment. The miracle has its own place in the Divine scheme; something great and beyond human power and comprehension is wrought about now and again to show that the source of the great Message of Truth is supernatural, Divine. Thus the Holy Qur'an makes it clear that the bringing about of a transformation is the real object for which prophets are raised up, that this object is attained by several means, each of which, therefore, has but a secondary value, and that among these evidences of the truth of the Prophet, the miracle occupies not the highest place.

Thus it is that, while the Holy Qur'an is full of arguments, it makes frequent appeals to human nature, and repeatedly refers to the histories of previous peoples, the mention of miracles in it is very rare. But still they are not denied:

وَأَقْسَمُوا بِاللهِ
جَهْدَ أَيْمَانِهِمْ لَئِنْ جَاءَتْهُمْ آيَةٌ لَيُؤْمِنُنَّ بِهَا ۖ قُلْ
إِنَّمَا الْآيَاتُ عِنْدَ اللهِ وَمَا يُشْعِرُكُمْ أَنَّهَا إِذَا جَاءَتْ
لَا يُؤْمِنُونَ ﴿١٠﴾

"And they swear by Allāh with the strongest of their oaths that if a sign came to them they would most certainly believe in it. Say: Signs are only with Allāh; and what should make you know that when it comes they will not believe?" (The Qur'an, 6 : 110.)

The words "signs are only with Allāh" clearly imply, as do those that follow, that extraordinary signs will be shown as an evidence; that there are critics who see in this verse a denial of signs only because it is said that "signs are with God". It is true that the Holy Qur'an does not represent the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) as a wonder-worker, as the Gospels represent Jesus Christ. Signs were shown, not when the Prophet so desired, or when his opponents demanded, but when God alone in His supreme wisdom deemed it fit to show; hence, whenever an extraordinary sign of the Prophet's truth was demanded, the reply was that such a sign would come when God willed it.

Another much misunderstood verse of the Holy Qur'an relating to the showing of signs is:

وَمَا مَنَعَنَا أَنْ نُرْسِلَ بِالْآيَاتِ إِلَّا أَنْ كَذَّبَ بِهَا
الْأَوَّلُونَ ۖ وَآتَيْنَا ثَمُودَ النَّاقَةَ مُبْصِرَةً فَظَلَمُوا بِهَا ۖ
وَمَا نُرْسِلُ بِالْآيَاتِ إِلَّا تَحْذِيفًا ﴿٥٩﴾

"And nothing could have hindered Us that We should send signs except that the ancients rejected them . . . and We do not send signs but to warn." (The Qur'an, 17: 59.)

The words do not signify that because the former people had rejected the signs, therefore God would send no more. Had this been their meaning, God would have ceased to send even Divine messages, because the ancients had also rejected such messages. Also, because the word *āyah* means both a *sign* and a *communication*, the argument of rejection applies to both equally well. The meaning of the word is quite clear. If anything could have been considered as hindering God from sending a new communication or a sign, it would surely have been the rejection of such by previous generations, but it never did. The Divine Being has been equally merciful to all generations, and rejection by the former generations was no ground for depriving the later generations of signs and Divine guidance.

As I have already stated, the greatest miracle of Islam is the Holy Qur'an. Nor is this an after-thought on the part of the Muslims, for the Holy Book itself claims to be a miracle and has challenged the world to produce its like:

قُلْ لِّئِنْ
اجْتَمَعَتِ الْإِنْسُ وَالْجِنُّ عَلَى أَنْ يَأْتُوا بِمِثْلِ هَذَا
الْقُرْآنِ لَا يَأْتُونَ بِمِثْلِهِ وَلَوْ كَانَ بَعْضُهُمْ لِبَعْضٍ
ظَهِيرًا ﴿٨٨﴾

"If men and Jinn should combine together to produce the like of this Qur'an, they could not produce the like of it, though some of them were aiders of others." (The Qur'an, 17 : 88.)

أَمْ يَقُولُونَ افْتَرَاهُ ۖ
قُلْ فَأْتُوا بِعَشْرِ سُوْرٍ مِّثْلِهِ مُفْتَرِيَاتٍ ۖ وَادْعُوا
مَنْ اسْتَطَعْتُمْ مِنْ دُونِ اللهِ إِنْ كُنْتُمْ صَادِقِينَ ﴿١١﴾

"Or, do they say, he has forged it? Say, Then bring ten forged chapters like it and call upon whom you can besides Allāh, if you are truthful." (The Qur'an, 11: 13.)

أَمْ يَقُولُونَ افْتَرَاهُ ۚ قُلْ فَأْتُوا بِسُورَةٍ
مِثْلِهِ وَادْعُوا مَنِ اسْتَطَعْتُمْ مِنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ إِنْ
كُنْتُمْ صَادِقِينَ ۝

"Or, do they say, he has forged it? Say, Then bring a chapter like this and invite whom you can besides Allāh, if you are truthful." (The Qur'ān, 10: 38.)

وَإِنْ كُنْتُمْ فِي رَيْبٍ مِمَّا نَزَّلْنَا عَلَىٰ
عَبْدِنَا فَاتُوا بِسُورَةٍ مِثْلِهِ ۚ وَادْعُوا شُهَدَاءَكُمْ
مِنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ إِنْ كُنْتُمْ صَادِقِينَ ۝

"And if you are in doubt as to that which We have revealed to Our servant, then produce a chapter like it, and call on your helpers besides Allāh, if you are truthful." (The Qur'ān, 2: 23.)

مَا نُنَزِّلُ الْمَلَائِكَةَ
إِلَّا بِالْحَقِّ وَمَا كَانُوا إِذَا مُنْظَرِينَ ۝ إِنَّا نَحْنُ
نَزَّلْنَا الذِّكْرَ وَإِنَّا لَهُ لَحَافِظُونَ ۝

"We send not angels but with truth. And then they would not be respited. Surely We have revealed the reminder. [Qur'ān]. And surely We are its Guardian." (The Qur'ān, 15: 8-9.)

بَلْ هُوَ قُرْآنٌ مَجِيدٌ ۝ فِي كُوفٍ مَحْفُوظٍ ۝

"Nay, it is a glorious Qur'ān in a guarded tablet." (The Qur'ān, 85: 21-22.)

إِنَّهُ لَقُرْآنٌ
كَرِيمٌ ۝ فِي كِتَابٍ مَكْنُونٍ ۝ لَا يَمَسُّهُ إِلَّا
الْمُطَهَّرُونَ ۝ تَنْزِيلٌ مِنْ رَبِّ الْعَالَمِينَ ۝

"Surely it is a bountious Qur'ān, in a book that is protected, which none touches save the purified ones, a revelation from the Lord of the Worlds." (The Qur'ān, 56: 77-80.)

And if the claim be so great, the proof is not less, in witness whereof let me cite a few quotations from recent non-Muslim writers:

"It was the one miracle claimed by Muhammad — his 'standing miracle' he called it; and a miracle indeed it is." (Bosworth Smith's *Mohammed and Mohammedanism*, p. 290.)

"The Qur'ān is unapproachable as regards convincing power, eloquence and even composition." (Hartwig Hirschfeld, *New Researches*, London 1902, p. 8.)

"Never has a people been led more rapidly to civilization, such as it was, than were the Arabs through Islam." (Hartwig Hirschfeld, *New Researches*, London 1902, p.8.)

"A more disunited people it would be hard to find, till suddenly, the miracle took place! A man arose who, by his personality and by his claim to direct Divine guidance, actually brought about the impossible — namely the union of all these warring factions." (The *Ins and Outs of Mesopotamia*, p. 99.)

"That the best of Arab writers has never succeeded in producing anything equal in merit to the Qur'ān itself is not surprising." (Professor E. H. Palmer in his *Introduction to The Koran*, London, 1820.)

"Well then, if the Qur'ān were his own composition other men could rival it. Let them produce ten verses like it. If they could not (and it is obvious that they could not) then let them accept the Qur'ān as an outstanding evidential miracle." (H. A. R. Gibb, *Mohammedanism*, London, 1953, p. 33.)

"It [Qur'an] is a literal revelation of God, dictated to Muhammad by Gabriel, perfect in every letter. It is an everpresent miracle witnessing to itself and to Muhammad, the Prophet of God. Its miraculous quality resides partly in its style, so perfect and lofty that neither men nor jinn could produce a single chapter to compare with its briefest chapter, and partly in its content of teachings, prophecies about the future, and amazingly accurate information such as the illiterate Muhammad could never have gathered of his own accord." (Harry Gaylord Dorman, *Towards Understanding Islam*, New York, 1948, p. 3.)

"And they shall not bring to you any argument, but we have brought to you (one) with truth and best in significance." (The Qur'an, 25 : 33.)

"I am Allāh the Seeing. (This is) a Book which we have revealed to you that you may bring forth men, by their Lord's permission, from darkness into light, to the way of the Mighty, the Praised One." (The Qur'an, 14:1.)

"The truth is, I do not find any understanding author who controverts the elegancy of the Alcoran, it being generally esteemed as the standard of the Arabic language and eloquence." (Dr. Henry Stubbe, M.A., *Rise and Progress of Mahometanism*, London, 1911, p. 158.)

"So there has been no opportunity for any forgery or pious fraud in the Koran, which distinguishes it from almost all other important religious works of ancient times . . . It is exceedingly strange that this illiterate person should have composed the best book in the language." (Basanta Coomar Bose, *Mahomedanism*, Calcutta, 1931.)

"It is more read than any other book in the world. The Christian Bible may be the best seller, but nearly 250 million followers of the Prophet Muhammad read or recite long sections of Alcoran five times a day, every day of their lives, from the time they can talk." (Charles Francis Potter, *The Faiths Men Live By*, Kingswood, Surrey, 1955, p. 81.)

The above estimate of the world Muslim population is incorrect; it is now estimated at over 700 million.

"The Koran is probably the most often read book in the world, surely the most often memorised, and possibly the most influential in the daily life of the people who believe in it. Not quite as long as the New Testament, written in an exalted style, it is neither poetry nor ordinary prose, yet it possesses the ability to arouse its hearers to ecstasies of faith.

"The Koran was revealed to Muhammad between the years 610 and 632 in the cities of Mecca and Medinah. Devoted scribes wrote it down on 'scraps of paper, bark, and the white shoulder blades of animals'. The early revelations were dazzling assurances that there was only one God, Merciful and Compassionate: 'He is Allāh, the Creator, the Maker, the Fashioner. Whatever is in the heavens and the earth declares His glory: and He is the Mighty, the Wise'." (James A. Michner, "Islam — The Misunderstood Religion", in the *Reader's Digest* (American edition) for May, 1955.)

"From the literary point of view, the Koran is regarded as a specimen of the purest Arabic, written in half poetry and half prose. It has been said that in some cases grammarians have adopted their rules to agree with certain phrases and expressions used in it, and that, though several attempts have been made to produce a work equal to it as far as elegant writing is concerned, none has as yet succeeded.

"It will thus be seen, from the above, that a final and complete text of the Koran was prepared within twenty years after the death (A.D. 632) of Muhammad, and that this has remained the same, without any change, or alteration by enthusiasts, translators, or interpolators, up to the present time. It is to be regretted that the same cannot be said of all the books of the Old and New Testaments." (F. F. Arbuthnot, *The Construction of the Bible and the Koran*, London, 1885, p. 5.)

Let us see, very briefly, how did this Qur'an which we claim to be the greatest miracle of Islam bring about the miraculous transformation of the people who adopted this book as their creed. Here again, instead of saying anything in my own words, I would like to quote some non-Muslim thinkers:

"In the fifth and sixth centuries the civilized world stood on the verge of chaos. The old emotional cultures that had made civilization possible, since they had given to men a sense of unity and of reverence for their rulers, had broken down and nothing had been found adequate to take their place . . .

"It seemed then the great civilization which it had taken four thousand years to construct was on the verge of disintegration, and that mankind was likely to return to that of barbarism where every tribe and sect was against the next, and law and order was unknown . . . The old tribal sanctions had lost their power . . . The new sanctions created by Chris-

tianity were working division and destruction instead of unity and order. It was a time fraught with tragedy. Civilization, like a gigantic tree whose foliage had overarched the world and whose branches had borne the golden fruits of art and science and literature, stood tottering . . . roited to the core. Was there any emotional culture that could be brought in to gather mankind once more into unity and so save civilization?"

Speaking of Arabia, the author continues:

"It was among these people that the man was born who was to unite the whole known world of the east and south." (J. H. Denison, *Emotion as the Basis of Civilization*, London, 1928, pp. 265 and 269.)

"We must not be surprised to find the *Qur'án* the fountain-head of the sciences. Every subject connected with heaven or earth, human life, commerce and various trades are occasionally touched upon, and this gave rise to the production of numerous monographs forming commentaries on parts of the holy book. In this way the *Qur'án* was responsible for great discussions, and to it was indirectly due the marvellous development of all branches of science in the Muslim world . . . This again not only affected the Arabs but also induced Jewish philosophers to treat metaphysical and religious questions after Arab methods. Finally, the way in which Christian scholasticism was fertilised by Arabian theosophy need not be further discussed.

"Spiritual activity once aroused within Islamic bounds was not confined to theological speculations alone. Acquaintance with the philosophical, mathematical, astronomical and medical writings of the Greeks led to the pursuance of these studies. In the descriptive revelations Muhammad repeatedly calls attention to the movement of the heavenly bodies, as parts of the miracles of Alláh forced into the service of man and therefore not to be worshipped. How successfully Moslim people of all races pursued the study of astronomy is shown by the fact that for centuries they were its principal supporters. Even now many Arabic names of stars and technical terms are in use. Medieval astronomers in Europe were pupils of the Arabs.

"In the same manner the *Qur'án* gave an impetus to medical studies and recommended the contemplation and study of Nature in general." (Hartwig Hirschfeld, Ph.D., M.R.A.S., *New Researches into the Composition and Exegesis of the Qur'án*, London, 1902, p. 9.)

"Europe was darkened at sunset, Cordova shone with public lamps: Europe was dirty, Cordova built a thousand baths: Europe was covered

with vermin, Cordova changed its undergarments daily: Europe lay in mud, Cordova's streets were paved: Europe's palaces had smoke-holes in the ceiling, Cordova's arabesques were exquisite: Europe's nobility could not sign its name, Cordova's children went to school: Europe's monks could not read the baptismal service, Cordova's teachers created a library of Alexandrian dimensions." (Victor Robinson, *The Story of Medicine*, p. 164.)

"Take away that black man! I can have no discussion with him," exclaimed the Christian Archbishop Cyrus when the Arab conquerors had sent a deputation of their ablest men to discuss terms of surrender of the capital of Egypt, headed by Negro Ubadah as the ablest of them all.

"To the sacred archbishop's astonishment, he was told that this man was commissioned by General Amr: that the Moslems held Negroes and white men in equal respect — judging a man by his character and not by his colour.

"Well, if the Negro must lead, he must speak gently," ordered the prelate, so as not to frighten his white auditors.

"There are a thousand blacks, as black as myself, amongst our companions. I and they would be ready to meet and fight a hundred enemies together. We live only to fight for God, and to follow His will. We care naught for wealth, so long as we have the wherewithall to stay our hunger and to clothe our bodies. This world is naught for us, the next world is all."

"Such a spirit of class distinction is certainly the greatest hindrance to missionary work in the East, as every impartial observer has noted. How, for instance, can any other appeal stand against that of the Moslem who, in approaching the pagan, says to him, however obscure or degraded he may be, 'Embrace the faith, and you are at once an equal and a brother'. Islam knows no 'colour line'." (S. S. Leeder, *Veiled Mysteries of Egypt*, London, 1912, pp. 332-335.)

"Over a large portion of the world, Islam as a missionary religion is more successful than Christianity. (Sensation). Not only are the Muslim converts from paganism more numerous than the Christian converts, but Christianity in some regions is actually receding before Islam, while attempts to proselytize the Mahometan nations are notoriously unsuccessful . . .

Prophecies of the Holy Qur'an about the early Islamic period

Of all the miracles, the Holy Qur'an gives the first place to prophecy, and, in fact, prophecy does, in some respects, enjoy a pride of place beyond that attached to other miracles. Miracles generally are manifestations of the power of God, and prophecy gives prominence to God's infinite knowledge which comprehends the future as well as the past and present. But there is one great disadvantage attaching to all miracles which are merely manifestations of power. It is very difficult to secure reliable evidence for them under all circumstances. Certain men may have witnessed the performance of such a miracle and their evidence may satisfy their contemporaries. But, with the lapse of time, their testimony loses much of its value. Therefore a miracle stands in need of being proved up to the hilt before it may be used as evidence of a prophet's claim, and in most cases it is very hard, if not impossible, to adduce any proof that the miracle ever actually took place.

I would give one example in illustration of what I have said above. The Holy Qur'an gives prominence to the great prophecy of the triumph of Islam, and its earlier chapters are full of such prophecies uttered in various forms. Now these chapters were revealed and these prophecies announced, at a time when the Holy Prophet was quite alone and helpless, beset by enemies on all sides plotting to put an end to his very life. The few adherents to his cause had by cruel persecution been forced to leave their very homes and to take refuge in foreign lands. There was not the remotest prospect of Islam ever making any headway against the mighty forces of polytheism and idolatry, the mass of superstition and evil of every kind ranged against it. All previous attempts at the regeneration of Arabia, those of the Jewish nation which had settled down in various parts of Arabia, of the Christian missionaries who had the backing of the powerful Roman empire in the north and of Abyssinia in the south and west, the indigenous Arab attempt known as Hanifism, they had all proved utter failures, and thus the fate of each previous attempt was only a symbol of despair for any fresh reform movement. Yet under these circumstances, amid all this despair on every side, we find prophecy after prophecy announced in the surest and most certain terms to the effect

"Islam has done more for civilization than Christianity . . . Islam, above all, is the most powerful total abstinence in the world, whereas the extension of European trade means the extension of drunkenness and vice, and the degradation of people; while Islam induces a civilization of no low order, including a knowledge of reading and writing, decent clothing, personal cleanliness, veracity and self-respect. Its restraining and civilizing effects are marvellous . . . We ought to begin by recognizing the fact that Islam is not an anti-Christian faith but a half-Christian faith . . . Islam is cosmopolitan — not like Judaism, confined to one race, but extended to the whole world . . . There is nothing in the teaching of Mahomet antagonistic to Christianity . . . It was a revolt against the exaltation of celibacy as a crown of piety. It brought out the fundamental dogma of religion — the unity and greatness of God. It replaced monkiness by manliness. It gave hope to the slave, brotherhood to mankind and recognition of the fundamental facts of human nature.

"Mahomet, like Moses, did not prohibit them (polygamy and domestic slavery); that would have been impossible; but he endeavoured to mitigate their evils. Slavery is no part of the creed of Islam. It was tolerated as a necessary evil by Mahomet as it was by Moses and St. Paul . . . The strictly regulated polygamy of Moslem lands is infinitely less degrading to women and less injurious to men than the promiscuous polygamy which is the curse of Christian cities, and which is absolutely unknown in Islam." (The Reverend Canon Isaac Taylor, Lecture on "Mahomedanism" at the Church Congress at Wolverhampton on 7th October 1887, and reported in *The Times*, London, for 8th October 1887.)

In short, the Qur'an is a miracle because it brought about the greatest transformation that the world has ever witnessed — a transformation of the individual, of the family, of society, of the nation, of the country; an awakening, material as well as moral, intellectual as well as spiritual. It produced an effect a hundred thousand times greater than that of any other miracle recorded of any prophet; hence its claim to be the greatest of all miracles is incontestable and uncontested.

that the greatest forces of opposition would be brought to naught, that the enemies of Islam would be put to shame and perish, that Islam would become the religion of the whole of Arabia, that the empire of Islam would be established and battles be fought in which the Muslims would be victorious and the enemy brought low, that Islam would spread to the farthest corners of the earth and that it would ultimately be triumphant over all religions of the world.

I give a few quotations from the Holy Qur'an:

اَكْفَارَكُمْ خَيْرٌ مِّنْ
اُولٰٓئِكَ اَمْ لَكُمْ بَرَاءَةٌ فِي الزُّبُرِ ۚ اَمْ يَقُولُونَ
نَحْنُ جَمِيعٌ مُّنتَصِرُونَ ۚ سَيُزَيَّرُ الْجَمْعُ وَيُولَوْنَ الدُّبُرَ ۝

"Are the unbelievers of yours better than these (Pharaoh and others), or is there an exemption for you in the scriptures? Or do they say, We are a host allied together to help each other? Soon shall the host be routed, and they shall turn (their) backs." (The Qur'an, 54: 43-45.)

وَسَكَنْتُمْ فِي
مَسْكِنِ الَّذِيْنَ ظَلَمُوْا اَنْفُسَهُمْ وَتَبَيَّنَ لَكُمْ كَيْفَ
فَعَلْنَا بِهِمْ وَضَرَبْنَا لَكُمْ الْاَمْثَالَ ۚ وَقَدْ مَكَرُوا
مَكْرَهُمْ وَعِنْدَ اللّٰهِ مَكْرُهُمْ ۚ وَاِنْ كَانَ مَكْرُهُمْ
لَيَنْزُولٌ مِنْهُ الْجِبَالُ ۚ فَلَا تَحْسَبَنَّ اللّٰهَ مُخْلِفَ
وَعْدِهِ ۚ رُسُلُهُ ۚ وَاِنَّ اللّٰهَ عَزِيْزٌ ذُو انتِقَامٍ ۝

"And you dwell in the abodes of those who were unjust to themselves, and it is clear to you how We dealt with them and We have set forth parables to you. And they have indeed planned their plan, and their plan is with Allāh, though their plan was such that the mountains should pass away thereby. So do not think Allāh to be failing in His promise to His messengers; for Allāh is Mighty, the Lord of retribution." (The Qur'an, 14: 45-47.)

اِنَّ الَّذِيْنَ كَفَرُوْا
لَنْ تَغْنِيَّ عَنْهُمْ اَمْوَالُهُمْ وَلَا اَوْلَادُهُمْ مِّنْ
اللّٰهِ شَيْئًا ۚ وَاُولٰٓئِكَ هُمُ الَّذِيْنَ كَذَّبُوْا
اِلٰهًا ۚ وَالَّذِيْنَ مِّنْ قَبْلِهِمْ ۚ كَذَّبُوْا بِآيٰتِنَا
فَاَخَذَهُمُ اللّٰهُ بِذُنُوْبِهِمْ ۚ وَاللّٰهُ شَدِيْدُ الْعِقَابِ ۝
قُلْ لِّلَّذِيْنَ كَفَرُوْا سَتُغْلَبُوْنَ وَتُخْشَرُوْنَ اِلٰى
جَهَنَّمَ ۚ

"Those who disbelieve, neither their wealth nor their children shall avail them in the least against Allāh . . . After the manner of the people of Pharaoh and those before them; they rejected Our communications, so Allāh seized them on account of their sins and Allāh is severe in requiting (evil). Say to those who disbelieve; You shall be vanquished and driven together to hell." (The Qur'an, 3: 9-11.)

وَقَالَ الَّذِيْنَ كَفَرُوْا لِرُسُلِهِمْ
لَنُخْرِجَنَّكُمْ مِّنْ اَرْضِنَاۤءٍ اَوْ لَتَعُوْدُنَّ فِيْ مِلَّتِنَاۤءٍ ۚ فَاَوْحٰى
اِلَيْهِمْ رَبُّهُمْ لَنُهْلِكَنَّ الظّٰلِمِيْنَ ۚ وَلَنُسْكِنَنَّكُمْ
الْاَرْضَ مِنْۢ بَعْدِهِمْ ۚ

"And those who disbelieved said to their messengers, We shall drive you forth from our land, or else you shall come back into our religion. And their Lord revealed to them, Certainly We shall destroy the unjust and We shall settle you in the land after them." (The Qur'an, 14: 13-14.)

وَلَا تَيْهِنُوا وَلَا تَحْزَنُوا وَأَنْتُمْ الْأَعْلَوْنَ إِنْ كُنْتُمْ
صَّادِقِينَ ﴿١٣٩﴾

“And be not infirm, and grieve not, you have the upper hand if you are believers.” (The Qur’án, 3:138.)

وَلَمَّا رَأَى الْمُؤْمِنُونَ
الْأَحْزَابَ قَالُوا هَذَا مَا وَعَدَنَا اللَّهُ وَرَسُولُهُ وَ
صَدَقَ اللَّهُ وَرَسُولُهُ وَمَا زَادَهُمْ إِلَّا إِيمَانًا
وَتَسْلِيمًا ﴿١٤٠﴾

“And when the believers saw the allies, they said: This is what Alláh and His Messenger promised us, and Alláh and His Messenger spoke the truth; and it only increased them in faith and submission.” (The Qur’án, 33:22.)

إِنَّ الَّذِي فَرَضَ عَلَيْكَ الْقُرْآنَ لَرَادُّكَ إِلَيْهِ
مَعَادٌ ط

“Verily, He Who has enjoined the Qur’án upon thee shall bring thee back to the Place of Return (Mecca).” (The Qur’án, 28:85.)

قُلْ لِلْمُخَلَّفِينَ مِنَ الْأَعْرَابِ سَتُدْعُونَ إِلَى
قَوْمٍ أُولِي بَأْسٍ شَدِيدٍ تُقَاتِلُونَهُمْ أَوْ يُسْلِمُونَ
فَإِنْ تَطِيعُوا يُؤْتِكُمُ اللَّهُ أَجْرًا حَسَنًا ؕ

“Say to those of the dwellers of the desert who lagged behind: You will soon be called against a people of mighty prowess to fight against them until they submit. Then if you obey, Alláh will grant you a good reward.” (The Qur’án, 48:16.)

إِنَّا فَتَحْنَا لَكَ فَتْحًا مُبِينًا ۚ لِيُغْفِرَ لَكَ اللَّهُ مَا
تَقَدَّمَ مِنْ ذَنْبِكَ وَمَا تَأَخَّرَ وَيُتِمَّ نِعْمَتَهُ عَلَيْكَ
وَيَهْدِيكَ صِرَاطًا مُسْتَقِيمًا ۚ وَيَنْصُرَكَ اللَّهُ
نَصْرًا عَظِيمًا ﴿١٤١﴾

“Surely We have given thee a clear victory, that Alláh may rectify for thee that which has gone before of the faults attributed to thee, and that which remains behind. And complete His favour to thee and guide thee on a right way, And that Alláh might help thee with a mighty help.” (The Qur’án, 48:1-3.)

إِذَا جَاءَ نَصْرُ اللَّهِ وَالْفَتْحُ ۖ وَرَأَيْتَ النَّاسَ
يَدْخُلُونَ فِي دِينِ اللَّهِ أَفْوَاجًا ۖ فَسَبِّحْ بِحَمْدِ
رَبِّكَ وَاسْتَغْفِرْ لَهُ إِنَّهُ كَانَ تَوَّابًا ﴿١٤٢﴾

“When there comes the help of Alláh and the victory. And you see men entering the religion of Alláh in companies. Then celebrate the praise of your Lord, and ask his forgiveness; surely He is oft-returning (to mercy).” (The Qur’án, 110:1-3.)

سَنُرِيهِمْ آيَاتِنَا فِي الْأَفَاقِ وَفِي أَنْفُسِهِمْ حَتَّى
يَتَبَيَّنَ لَهُمْ أَنَّهُ الْحَقُّ ط

“We shall soon show them Our signs in remote regions and in their own souls, until it becomes quite clear to them that it is the truth.” (The Qur’án, 41:53.)

وَلَقَدْ كَتَبْنَا فِي الزَّبُورِ مِنْ
بَعْدِ الذِّكْرِ أَنَّ الْأَرْضَ يَرِثُهَا عِبَادِيَ الصَّالِحُونَ ﴿١٠٩﴾
إِنَّ فِي هَذَا لَآيَةً لِّقَوْمٍ عَابِدِينَ ﴿١١٠﴾

“And truly We wrote in the Book after the reminder that the land —
My righteous servants shall inherit it. In this is a message to a people
who serve Us.” (The Qur’án, 21:105-106.)

وَعَدَ اللَّهُ الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا مِنْكُمْ وَعَمِلُوا الصَّالِحَاتِ
لَيَسْتَخْلِفَنَّهُمْ فِي الْأَرْضِ كَمَا اسْتَخْلَفَ الَّذِينَ مِنْ
قَبْلِهِمْ ۖ وَكَيْفَ كَانَ لَهُمْ دِينُهُمُ الَّذِي ارْتَضَىٰ لَهُمْ
وَكَيْفَ لَنَّهُمْ مِنْ بَعْدِ خَوْفِهِمْ أَمْنًا

“Alláh has promised to those of you who believe and do good that
He will make them rulers in the earth as He made rulers before them,
and that He will establish for them their religion which He has chosen
for them, and that He will, after their fear, give them security in exchange.”
(The Qur’án, 24:55.)

Has not all this been said in the Holy Qur’án in plain words, and
at a time when there was not the least prospect of Islam gaining ground?
And was not all this brought to fulfilment, against all expectations, in the
lifetime of the Holy Prophet? These are simple questions and no one
who has even the slightest acquaintance with the Holy Qur’án or the
history of Islam can have any hesitation in answering them in the
affirmative.

The value of prophecy, as a miracle of Islam, is however, much
more extensive. There are great and wonderful prophecies in the Book,
and more still in the Hadith, extending into the far future, many of which
have been fulfilled in our own age, and almost every generation of Muslims
sees with its own eyes the fulfilment of one or more of these great pro-
phesies, and needs not to turn the pages of history to find out what

miracles were performed by the Holy Prophet in the past. Another
feature of miracles in Islam is that they have been vouchsafed even to
the righteous followers of the Holy Prophet in every age in the form
of *Karámát* (charismatic gifts).

Speaking of such people, the Holy Qur’án says:

لَهُمُ الْبُشْرَىٰ فِي الْحَيَاةِ الدُّنْيَا وَفِي الْآخِرَةِ ۚ

“They will have good news (bushra) in this world’s life and in the
hereafter.” (The Qur’án, 10:64.)

And elsewhere:

تَنْزِيلُ عَلَيْهِمُ
الْمَلَائِكَةُ لَا تَخَافُوا وَلَا تَحْزَنُوا وَأَبْشِرُوا بِالْجَنَّةِ
الَّتِي كُنتُمْ تُوعَدُونَ ﴿٤٠﴾

“The angels descend upon them, saying, Fear not, nor be grieved,
and receive good news of the garden which you were promised.” (The
Qur’án, 41:30.)

And according to the *Hadith*:

“Nothing remains of prophethood except *mubashsharat*.” (The
Sahih of Bukhári, 91:5.)

“And these (*mubashsharat*) are explained by the Holy Prophet to
be good visions and are called a part of prophethood.” (The *Sahih* of
Bukhári, 91:4.)

Prophecies of the Holy Qur'an about the Present

"It seems that they (i.e. Gog and Magog) represent none too badly the present state of world politics. World politics, like the history of Gog and Magog, are very confused and much disputed. Still, I think there is room for both of them.

"On the one side is Gog, and on the other is Magog. But be careful, my Lord Mayor, when you put them back, to keep them from colliding with each other; for if that happens, both Gog and Magog would be smashed to pieces and we should all have to begin all over again — and begin from the bottom of the pit."

The above passages are from Sir Winston Churchill's speech made at the Lord Mayor's Banquet at Guildhall in London on 9th November 1951 on the occasion of the restoration of the effigies of Gog and Magog. (Reported in *The Times*, London for 10th November 1951, p. 6.)

Corruption in the Land

We are living in an age when the world could be overtaken by disaster at any time. It would, however, be the outcome of man's own deeds or the consequences of man's achievements in the physical domain directed towards wrong ends. The destruction of Jerusalem at the hands of Nebuchadnezzar is an historical instance in point, when the Jews were punished for their corruption and transgression. God is no respecter of persons. The Muslims suffered at the hands of Halagu when the centre of their civilization was completely destroyed. When evil and corruption prevail in human affairs people are bound to taste the bitter fruit of their misdeeds. The Qur'an has depicted the condition of the world at the advent of the Prophet Muhammad (the peace and blessings of Allāh be upon him!) in the following words:

ظَهَرَ الْفَسَادُ
فِي الْبَرِّ وَالْبَحْرِ بِمَا كَسَبَتْ أَيْدِي النَّاسِ لِيُذِيقَهُمْ
بَعْضَ الَّذِي عَمِلُوا لَعَلَّهُمْ يَرْجِعُونَ ﴿٤١﴾ قُلْ سِيرُوا
فِي الْأَرْضِ فَانظُرُوا كَيْفَ كَانَ عَاقِبَةُ الَّذِينَ
مِنْ قَبْلُ ۚ كَانَ أَكْثَرُهُمْ مُشْرِكِينَ ﴿٤٢﴾

Corruption has appeared in the land and the sea, on account of that which men's hands have wrought, that He may make them taste a part of that which they have done, so that they may return. Say: travel in the land, then see what was the end of those before! Most of them were polytheists. (The Qur'an, 30: 41-42.)

The advice in the second part of the verse to go round in the world and see what was the end of those in the past who were transgressors . . . enunciates a general Divine principle that all those who have transgressed would have a similar end. Thus these words have also a special significance for the world in which we live today.

A warning to the Jews

I would like first to give an extract from the book entitled *Jewish Conspiracy and the Muslim World*, by Maulānā 'Abd ul-'Azīz, edited and published by, Misbāhul-Islām Fārūqī, Karachi, February 1967. On reading this book one is able to understand more clearly the mentality and background of the Jews, and also the Qur'anic verses which refer to the Jews. I quote the book as follows:

"The history of the 'scattered tribe' of Jews has been a history of fraud and deceit, criminality and cunning, sabotage and destruction. For the last two thousand years they have been engaged in all sorts of crimes against humanity and the worst sufferers have always been those nations who committed the blunder of opening their doors to this highly insidious cabal. If we just look at the history of only the recent past the truth of the statement would be quite manifest. I think a brief survey will be useful:

"They were turned out of Portugal and Spain. They were driven out of England in 1290. They were twice pushed away from France, once in 1306 and again in 1394. They were exiled from Belgium in 1370 and from Czechoslovakia in 1380. Holland drove them out in 1444, and Italy turned them out in 1540. Germany pushed them out in 1551. Russia exiled them in 1510. Indeed exilement has been their lot since the beginning; and if we look at the earlier history too we will find that they have met the same fate all along. It is a punishment and a curse over them although they like to remain under the self-deception of being 'God's Chosen People'."

But why has so much degradation and humiliation become part of their destiny? After all what is wrong with them?

Without going into details, if we look at their national character, their social behaviour, their basic beliefs, thinking and attitude, and the manner they behave in in practical life, there remains no wonder if they are hated, cursed and condemned. We need not go to other sources to understand their mental make up because the *Talmud* itself is explicit on the point. It declares :

— *The wealth and property of non-Jews is permissible for the Jews. If they get hold of anything belonging to others, it would legitimately belong to them.*

— *Jews have been chosen to exercise control and authority over the life and property of non-Jewish people.*

— *Just as man is superior to animals, the Jews are superior to all mankind inhabiting the earth, since with the exception of Jews all others have animality and rascality in them.*

— *The Jews have been ordained by God that they accept interest from non-Jews and it is prohibited to advance loans without charging interest.*

Some Muslim readers may not know that the *Talmud* is the religion and ideology of the Jews, and that another is the *Mishnah*. It is these two books which govern the lives of the Jews as they do not pay any great heed to the teachings of the *Torah*. (The *Peutcateuch*.)

In the Holy Qur'an, the Jews are given more severe warnings than any other nation on the earth. They have even been cursed by their own prophets, as can be seen in the following verse from the Holy Qur'an:

لَعْنُ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا مِنْ بَنِي إِسْرَءِيلَ عَلَى لِسَانِ
دَاوُدَ وَعِيسَى ابْنِ مَرْيَمَ ذَلِكَ بِمَا عَصَوْا وَكَانُوا
يَعْتَدُونَ ﴿٥٨﴾

"Those who disbelieved from among the Children of Israel were cursed by the tongue of David and Jesus son of Mary. This was because they disobeyed and exceeded the limits." (The Qur'an, 5: 78.)

In the Bible also can be found predictions by their own prophets with regard to their persecution and destruction, in particular, by the Prophets Moses and Ezekiel (peace be on them!) when they warned that the Jews would never have a permanent homeland. The Prophet Moses had the following to say to them:

And the Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other . . . and among these nations shalt thou find no ease, neither shall the sole of thy foot have rest. But the Lord shall give thee a trembling heart and failing of eyes, and sorrow of mind. (Deuteronomy, 28: 64; 65.)

The above verse shows the extent of the disbelief and hypocrisy of the Jews, and it was through this disbelief, treachery and hypocrisy that the Prophet Moses, who was the lawgiver and saviour of the Jews, was forced to finally abandon them and wander into unknown lands never to be seen or heard of again, and it is interesting to note that neither the Muslims, the Christians nor the Jews have any knowledge or record of the demise and resting place of the Prophet Moses.

The Prophet Ezekiel (referred to in the Holy Qur'an as *Dhual-Kifl*) cursed them in the following words:

"(The Lord said), *And I will scatter thee among the heathen, and disperse thee in the countries, and will consume thy filthiness out of thee.*" (Ezekiel, 22 : 15.)

The most severe warning, however, comes in the following verse of the Holy Qur'an.

وَقَضَيْنَا إِلَىٰ بَنِي إِسْرَءِيلَ فِي
الْكِتَابِ لَتُفْسِدُنَّ فِي الْأَرْضِ مَرَّتَيْنِ وَلَتَعْلُنَّ
عُلُوًّا كَبِيرًا ۝

"And We made known to the Children of Israel in the Book: Certainly you will make mischief in the land twice; and you will ascend exceeding heights." (The Qur'an, 17:4.)

فَإِذَا جَاءَ وَعْدُ أُولَاهُمَا بَعَثْنَا عَلَيْكُمْ
عِبَادًا أَنَا وَآلِي بَاسٍ شَدِيدٍ فَجَاسُوا خِلَالَ الدِّيَارِ
وَكَانَ وَعْدُ امْقِعُوا ۝

"So when of the two, the first warning came to pass, We raised against you Our servants, of mighty prowess, so they made havoc in (your) houses. And it was an accomplished threat." (The Qur'an, 17:5.)

ثُمَّ رَدَدْنَا لَكُمُ الْكَرَّةَ عَلَيْهِمْ
وَأَنذَرْنَاكُمْ بِأَمْوَالٍ وَبَنِينَ وَجَعَلْنَكُمْ أَكْثَرَ تَفِيرًا ۝

"Then We gave you back the turn against them, and aided you with wealth and children, and made you a numerous band." (The Qur'an, 17:6.)

Verse 5 of the above relates to the destruction of the temple at Jerusalem, and the murder, imprisonment, and banishment of the Jews by the Babylonians in the year 558 B.C. Verse 6 refers to the return of the Jews, and the rebuilding of the temple under Zerubbabel, and to their subsequent prosperity.

Their second downfall is referred to in the following verse:

إِنْ أَحْسَنْتُمْ أَحْسَنْتُمْ لِأَنفُسِكُمْ تَدْرُونَ ۝ وَإِنْ أَسَأْتُمْ فَلَهَا ۝
فَإِذَا جَاءَ وَعْدُ الْآخِرَةِ لِيَسُوءَ وُجُوهَكُمْ وَلِيَدْخُلُوا
الْمَسْجِدَ كَمَا دَخَلُوهُ أَوَّلَ مَرَّةٍ وَلِيُتَبِّرُوا مَا عَلَوْا
تَتَبِيرًا ۝

"(O Children of Israel) If you do good, you do good for your own souls. And if you do evil, it is for them (i.e. for your own souls). So, when the second warning came, (We raised another people) that they might bring you to grief and that they might enter the Mosque as they entered it the first time, and that they might destroy, whatever they conquered, with utter destruction." (The Qur'an, 17:7.)

The above verse refers to the destruction of the temple for the second time, and which was accomplished by the Romans under Titus.

Twice the Jews suffered destruction, and twice they returned to the promised land, but as the Holy Qur'an says:

عَسَىٰ رَبُّكُمْ أَنْ يَرْحَمَكُم ۚ وَإِنْ عُثِرْتُمْ مَعًا

"It may be that your Lord will have mercy on you, and if you return to (mischief), We will return to (punishment)." (The Qur'an, 17:8.)

Allāh is ever merciful, and the Holy Qur'an says that in His mercy Allāh will grant the Jews a third chance to mend their ways, as shown in the following verse:

وَقُلْنَا مِنْ بَعْدِهِ لِبَنِي إِسْرَءِيلَ
اسْكُنُوا الْأَرْضَ فَإِذَا جَاءَ وَعْدُ الْآخِرَةِ جِئْنَا بِكُمْ لَفِيفًا ۝

"And We said thereafter to the Children of Israel, dwell securely in the land, But when the second of the warnings comes to pass We shall bring you as a crowd, gathered out of various nations." (The Qur'an, 17:104.)

These Qur'anic prophecies are being fulfilled clearly in the present day; for if we look into the present situation in Palestine, we can see that the Zionists with the help of *Dajjāl*, are gathering together from all parts of the earth. But have the Jews heeded the warnings of Allāh, against not dwelling peacefully in the land and not doing good? No, they have not; indeed their greed, ignorance and insolence is such that they heed no one, and care not whom they trample underfoot. Instead of glorifying their "holy land" and appreciating the mercy of Allāh, they are practising the vices of *Dajjāl* and turning this "holy land" into a den of vice, likened unto Sodam and Gomorrah.¹

[I would like to remind my Muslim readers in particular that the Zionist Jews of today are so powerful that they now hold to ransom even the great powers of the world. The reason for this is that they not only have the power of money but they also hold the balance of political power in these countries.]

The Russians have always aimed at establishing a foothold in the Middle East, but without success, and it is ironical that they should finally be able to do so with the help of the West, that has become a pawn of the Zionists and has treated the Arabs in such an abominable manner that they have been forced to turn to the Russians for help and support. The result of this is that the Russians now have such a strong foothold in the Middle East, and hold such influence there that most of the Arab States have become dependant on their patronage.

The Western Powers complain and bemoan the spread of Communist influence in the world today, but they are either too blind or too conceited to realize or admit that it is their own fault. It is their wrong and selfish attitude toward the developing countries which is responsible for the situation we see there today.

Due to their advancement in modern technology and warfare, the Israelis have the means to defeat the Arabs time and time again, but we should bear in mind that technology is not a closed shop. Although the Arab nations are, at the moment, somewhat backward in the technological know-how, yet sooner or later, their knowledge in this field will be equal

1 A group of deeply religious Israelis intend broadcasting Jewish religious broadcasts from Cyprus soon because of the "Israel Broadcasting Authority's extreme anti-religious policy". Representatives of the group are due to leave for Cyprus soon to negotiate with a local radio station owner for four hours' broadcasting time every week. The group is said to have support from "wide circles". *Daily Telegraph*, London, for 17th July 1971.

to that of the Israelis, and when this stage of equality is reached there can be little doubt that the Arabs will be able to pay the Zionists in their own coin and get back from them their lost homes and land. And this could possibly lead to another world war and global catastrophe.

We can see today how America and the West give support to Israel, and the Russians give support to the Arabs. But all this help and support is given only by their greed for political power, and when the clash between the Arabs and the Jews arises, and each is supported by its "mother" power, they in turn will clash, and the result of this clash of major powers would inevitably be catastrophic for the entire world. As the *Shorter Encyclopaedia of Islam* says: "... they (*Yājūj and Mājūj*) will be destroyed in the land of Israel" (page 637). (See for fuller implication Chapter 11 also.)

The word Israel is the sacred title given by Allāh to the Prophet Jacob and for his children, but ever since the Children of Israel came into being they have been unable to live at peace with their fellowmen. The Arabs have lived peaceably with the Jews even though they have never been friends. It has been the Arabs who have always given refuge and shelter to the Jews at times when the rest of the world persecuted and murdered them.

The Jews have suffered this plight at the hands of Nebuchadnezzar, Babylonians, Pharaohs, the Romans, Persians, Christians, and Hitler's Nazi Germany where some six million Jews were put to death in the gas chambers, but still the Jews are insolent and arrogant, and maintain that they are the chosen people of God, and therefore superior to all others. It is most likely due to their racial and high and mighty attitude (and the Jews are the only nation who are truly racial and practice discrimination) that they have been persecuted and humiliated in almost the entire world, and by European nations in particular.¹ Even today, a convert to Judaism will never be recognised by an orthodox Jew, and this is surely a clear sign of their prejudice and racialism.

1 For the first time in the history of Israel, four 18-year-olds have returned their call-up cards saying: "We were not born free in order to be oppressors, and oppression is not a reason to die". In a letter to General Moshe Dayan, Defence Minister, copies of which have been sent to Mrs. Meir, the Prime Minister, and General Bar Lev, the Chief of Staff, they continue: "We are not prepared to do to another nation what was done to our parents and ancestors." Though this is the first time call-up cards have been returned, there is considerable criticism, almost a feeling of guilt, among the youth towards the Government's policy on the Arab nations. *The Daily Telegraph*, London, for 4th August 1971.

It is safe to say that, as long as the State of Israel exists, the risk of conflict between the great powers will remain.

We may ask ourselves why the Jews are subjected to such trials and tribulations. The answer to this is that it is due to their wanton deception, hypocrisy, treachery, and usury, and for the unjust killing of the Prophets of Alláh. It is for these reasons also, that they have not yet had, or ever will have a permanent home, as have other nations, this is not only prophesied in the Holy Qur'án, but also in the Old and New Testaments of the Bible.

In the Holy Qur'án, Alláh says this of the Jews:

وَصْرًا بَشَ
عَلَيْهِمُ الْمَسْكَنَةُ ذَٰلِكَ بِأَنَّهُمْ كَانُوا يَكْفُرُونَ
بِآيَاتِ اللَّهِ وَيَقْتُلُونَ الْأَنْبِيَاءَ بِغَيْرِ حَقٍّ ذَٰلِكَ
بِمَا عَصَوْا وَكَانُوا يَعْتَدُونَ ﴿١١٠﴾

“And they (the Jews) shall incur the wrath of Alláh, and humiliation will be made to cling to them. This is because they disbelieved in the message of Alláh, and killed the Prophets of Alláh. This is because they disobeyed and exceeded the limits.” (The Qur'án, 3:111.)

With regard to the conflict between the Arabs and the Jews, this was predicted by our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) when he warned that the Arabs will fight the Jews at the time of *Dajjál*, but final victory would go to the Arabs. Readers will find reference to this in *Mishkáh al-Masábih*, chapter, ‘*Fitnah*’, which quotes it from the *Sahíh* of Muslim. The *Hadíth* reads:

He (Abú Hurayyah) reported the Messenger of Alláh as saying, “The last hour will not come before the Muslims fight the Jews and the Muslims kill them, so that Jews will hide behind stones and trees and the stone and the tree will say, ‘O Muslim, O servant of God! There is a Jew behind me; come and kill him.’ The only exception will be the box-thorn; for it is one of the trees of the Jews.”

I would like to remind the reader that the “hour” mentioned in this *Hadíth*, is not the “hour” of the Resurrection or the Day of Judgement, but the last hour of the destruction of nations, because the chapter

‘*Fitnah*’, in *Mishkáh al-Masábih* deals with the appearance of *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj*, and their domination, power and destruction.

The metaphorical part of this verse is, however, not difficult to define. As it states, the stones and the trees will speak out that there were Jews hiding behind them. By this is clearly meant that the Jews would find no shelter whatsoever from the onslaught of the Arabs, and the mention that only the box-thorn tree will give them shelter can only mean that they will alone find shelter with other Jews.

As I have said earlier, when the Arabs do achieve technological equality, the scales of knowledge, and perhaps even justice, will be evenly balanced and they will have might on their side and consequently destroy their aggressors. By this time, other nations will know the Jews for what they are worth and tire of helping and supporting them. Hence, they (the Jews) will stand to fight alone without help, shelter or refuge (stones and trees will refuse them shelter).

We hear a great deal these days about *Dajjál*, *Yájúj* and *Májúj* (Anglo-Saxon and Russian races) attempting to make peace between the Arabs and the Jews, but if we look into the history of these two races we find that no one has ever been able to bring about peace between them for the past three thousand years, and even though Alláh raised for the Jews alone over seventy prophets or reformers, they have not heeded or cared for God, prophets, or their fellowman. Such has been their arrogance. So when Alláh's prophets were unable to bring them together in peace, how can *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj* do so by their disbelieving hypocrisy. However, there comes a day of reckoning for each and every nation, and surely the day of reckoning for the Jews is to be a sad and sorry one.

I would like to remind the reader that history proves to us that no nation in this world holds its power for ever, and *Yájúj* and *Májúj* are in no way exempt from this law; sooner or later their power will decline and come to an end. I have mentioned elsewhere in the book that Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) predicted that the power of *Dajjál* would last for a limited time only.

As I have mentioned, the State of Israel was founded by *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj* for their own selfish motives; so when the power of *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj* runs out, the Jews will have no helpers and protectors (stones and trees) and Zionism will be left like a tree after a violent storm, uprooted, naked of leaves and branches with succour of no kind, left to the mercy of the elements to shrivel and die.

Alláh tells us in the Holy Qur'án that He did not create this wonderful world in vain, He had a motive for doing so, but this motive can never be fulfilled whilst *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj* reign in the earth, corrupting mankind with their atheism, sensualism, and materialism, making mankind morally bankrupt and so leading him away from his Creator, and setting him on the direct path to hell.

I here refer you to the following Qur'anic verses:

وَمَا خَلَقْنَا السَّمَاءَ وَالْأَرْضَ وَمَا بَيْنَهُمَا لْعِبَادٍ ۖ
وَمَا أَرْسَلْنَا مِنْ قَبْلِكَ مِنْ رَسُولٍ إِلَّا نُوحِي إِلَيْهِ
أَنَّهُ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا أَنَا فَاعْبُدُونِ ۖ

"And We (Alláh) created not the heavens and the earth and what is between them for sport . . . And We sent no messenger before thee, but We revealed to him that there is no God but Me, so serve Me." (The Qur'án, 21: 16; 25.)

وَمَا خَلَقْتُ الْجِنَّ وَالْإِنْسَ إِلَّا لِيَعْبُدُونِ ۖ
مَا أُرِيدُ مِنْهُمْ مِنْ رِزْقٍ وَمَا أُرِيدُ أَنْ يُطْعَمُونِ ۖ

"And I have not created the Jinn and the Men (the civilized and the uncivilized) except that they should worship Me. I desire no sustenance from them, nor do I desire that they should feed Me." (The Qur'án, 51: 56; 57.)

Regarding the motivation of Alláh, as mentioned in these Qur'anic verses, could any sincere thinking Muslim believe that mankind could submit itself to the worship of Alláh whilst the machinations of *Dajjál* control the earth? Surely not. There are, I am sure, a great number of Muslims who are totally unaware of the misguiding techniques of *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj*, in leading the world astray and deceiving the illiterate and innocent peoples of the world.

In the past they made full use of their Christian missionaries using their religion to bribe, dominate, and take control of the land of others, completely subjugating these ignorant and illiterate peoples. (Please see for details, Appendix, The Meaning of *Dajjál*). Today, however, their

missionary technique has lost its glossy appeal, as religion now has little or no hold on the world at the present time.

After the end of the second world war, they innovated a new and modern technique, creating secret organizations such as the C.I.A. (Central Intelligence Agency) in America and Western Europe, and K.G.B. in Russia and Eastern Europe. The cost of these organizations runs to fantastic sums, costing these countries millions of pounds, dollars, and rubals every year. Agents of these organizations are planted in every country of the world; they are spies of the most cunning nature and are seldom known even to each other. How is it possible for an outsider to know them? They are the most cunning watchdogs, and at the slightest hint that something in one country could affect their own national interest, they contrive some means of creating unrest and violence, whether it be civil strife or a military *coup d'état*. They have turned this foul game into a subtle art. Not only do they create enmity and unrest within a nation itself, but between one nation and another.

They spread their atheism and material ideology which breeds selfishness, contempt, hatred and fear to such a degree that man no longer has love or respect for his Creator or his fellowman. Blood is no longer a bond between family, and trust no longer a bond between friends, for when people are brainwashed and converted to this new and evil ideology all noble values and principles are cast aside.

The Muslim youth of today has been severely affected by this ideology; for as they are becoming more advanced and educated, they are also becoming psychological and moral slaves of this ideology which leads them finally to a stage when they become faithless and Godless and Islam for them becomes just a word without any meaning.

The C.I.A. organization is doing a great service to the State of Israel by stirring up trouble in the Middle and Far East. The State of Israel has subsequently become a tool of *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj*, and as a reciprocal gesture towards the C.I.A., the State of Israel¹ plays an equally

1 Writing about the role of the United States in the six-day June 1967 war, Mr. A. Schleifer in reviewing Evan M. Wilson *Jerusalem, Key to Peace*, Washington, DC, 1970, observes: "What Wilson did not know then was that Pentagon computers and planners have already assured both Abba Eban and President Johnson that in any conceivable circumstances and regardless of who attacked first, Israel would destroy the Arab air forces within hours and achieve its objectives within a week. That most of the world believed the contrary, that Israel was in grave danger and the Arabs poised to attack was neither an accident nor a mistake, it was a brilliantly executed stratagem by the architects of American policy." (*Middle East Forum*, Beirut, The Lebanon, for Spring 1971.)

nefarious part in creating tension in the Middle and Far East, and no doubt this is one of the main reasons for the creation of this State.

Another organization which must be mentioned is the American Peace Corps whose task it is to "civilize" the underdeveloped peoples of the world. Judging by the rules of *Dajjál*, to be civilized is to follow their greedy and corrupt culture. And so the youth of these Peace Corps are sent to "convert" these underdeveloped peoples to the modern Western civilization, but so degrading has been the behaviour and influence of this Peace Corps youth that they have been expelled and banned from many countries.

In some instances they have acted as agents for the Secret Service, but on the whole their "civilizing" of these people has been to introduce them to a near naked style of dress, drinking, drugs and free love, all-in-all freedom in the full sense of the word so that civilization has become synonymous with an indecent, unclean, and unwanted way of life. To be "civilized" today means to indulge in drink, drugs, nudism, and free love; to live for one's self and care not for God and one's fellow man, or for tomorrow and the hereafter.

It may be argued that these Peace Corps workers have done some good, but what good can they teach others when they have become so corrupt themselves? If they must "civilize" and "educate", surely they would be better employed doing so in their own countries and with their own people. Let them leave the "uncivilized" races alone, for though they may be poor and uneducated they are indeed rich in that they have decency and morality, and their form of civilization is on a much higher plain than that of the West.

Some readers may find what I have written difficult to believe, but if they stop to think and take notice of what goes on around them, they will see far more than I have mentioned.

With regard to the forming of these organizations, it is not difficult to see why they were created, and this is no doubt due to the guilty past of the European nations when they subjugated these less advanced peoples under their colonial power and used them as mere slaves. There is an inherent fear in these European nations in case these nations which they so cruelly dominated should become equally powerful and so "do unto others as they were done by", and as a result the previous lords and masters would become the underdogs, and this is why the European powers (*Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj*) dare not allow peace to prevail.

I would like to refer my readers to an interesting book which gives detailed information into the workings and methods of the C.I.A. and K.G.B. organizations. The title of this book is "*The Game of Nations*", written by Miles Copeland, and published by Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 5 Winsley Street, London, W.1. The book gives the most startling facts on the underhand activities of America, Britain, France, Germany and Russia and their fine art of creating trouble and unrest within States, and with one Arab State against another in the Middle East, and also their motives for creating the State of Israel.

A warning to the Christians

From the study of the Qur'an it appears that a strong warning has been given to those who call themselves Christians. The following words of the Qur'an will make this point clear:

الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ الَّذِي أَنْزَلَ عَلَى عَبْدِهِ الْكِتَابَ وَلَمْ يَجْعَلْ لَهُ عِوَجًا ۖ فَيَمَّا لَيُنَادِرُ بِأَسَا شَدِيدًا مِّنْ لَّدُنْهُ وَيُبَشِّرُ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ الَّذِينَ يَعْمَلُونَ الصَّالِحَاتِ أَنَّ لَهُمْ أَجْرًا حَسَنًا ۖ مَا كَثِيرٌ فِيهِ ۖ أَبَدًا ۖ وَ يُنذِرُ الَّذِينَ قَالُوا اتَّخَذَ اللَّهُ وَلَدًا ۚ وَكَذَّابًا ۖ مَا لَهُمْ بِهِ مِنْ عِلْمٍ وَلَا إِلَهَ بَالِهِمْ ۚ كَبُرَتْ كَلِمَةً تَخْرُجُ مِنْ أَفْوَاهِهِمْ ۚ إِنَّ يَقُولُونَ إِلَّا كَذِبًا ۚ فَلَعَلَّكَ بَاخِعٌ نَّفْسَكَ عَلَى آثَارِهِمْ ۚ إِنَّ لَمْ يُؤْمِنُوا بِهَذَا الْحَدِيثِ أَسَفًا ۖ

"Praise be to Alláh! Who revealed the Book to His servant, and allowed not therein any crookedness. Rightly directing to give warning of severe punishment from Him and to give good news to the believers who do good that theirs is a Godly reward. Staying in it forever. And to warn those who say: Alláh has taken to Himself a son. They have no

knowledge of it, nor had their fathers. Grievous is the word that comes out of their mouths. They speak nothing but a lie. (O Muhammad!) then maybe thou wilt kill thyself with grief, sorrowing after them if they believe not in this announcement." (The Qur'an, 18 : 1-6.)¹

The warning of severe punishment to those who have made Jesus a son of God shows . . . that great disasters will fall upon the Christian nations at a later day; as can be witnessed today. And it would seem, according to the Holy Qur'an, that this will be due to their wrong attitude towards life.

At another place Christians' absorbing love of this life has been described in the following words:

إِذْ قَالَ الْحَوَارِيُّونَ
لِيعِيسَى ابْنِ مَرْيَمَ هَلْ يَسْتَطِيعُ رَبُّكَ أَنْ يُنْزِلَ
عَلَيْنَا مَائِدَةً مِنَ السَّمَاءِ ۖ قَالَ اتَّقُوا اللَّهَ إِن كُنْتُمْ
مُؤْمِنِينَ ۝ قَالُوا نُرِيدُ أَنْ نَأْكُلَ مِنْهَا وَتَطْبِخَ
قُلُوبُنَا وَنَعْلَمَ أَنْ قَدْ صَدَّقْتَنَا وَنَكُونَ عَلَيْهَا
مِنَ الشَّاهِدِينَ ۝ قَالَ عِيسَى ابْنُ مَرْيَمَ اللَّهُمَّ
رَبَّنَا أَنْزِلْ عَلَيْنَا مَائِدَةً مِنَ السَّمَاءِ تَكُونُ لَنَا
عَيْدًا لِلأَوَّلِينَ وَالْآخِرِينَ وَآيَةً مِنْكَ ۖ وَارْزُقْنَا وَأَنْتَ
خَيْرُ الرَّازِقِينَ ۝

1 The Qur'an, 18:1-6. This last verse shows how much concerned was the Holy Prophet for the moral welfare of humanity at large, so much so that he is spoken of here as almost killing himself with grief. His was a life of absolute devotion to the cause of humanity, his only concern being that man should rise to the true dignity for which God has created him. This anxiety was not only for those around him, but it was equally for the Christians who had started to attribute a son to the Divine Being — thus embarking on a falacy which was to lead them ultimately away from the eternal truth. Reading verse 7 (which I give towards the end of this chapter) in conjunction with this verse, it becomes clear that the Holy Prophet had foreseen the catastrophe towards which the Christians were heading.

"When the disciples said: O Jesus, son of Mary, is thy Lord able to send down food to us from Heaven? He said: Keep your duty to Allāh if you are believers. They said: We desire to eat of it and that our hearts should be at rest, and that we may know that thou hast indeed spoken truth to us and that we may be witnesses thereof. Jesus, son of Mary, said: O Allāh, Our Lord, send down to us food from heaven, which should be to us an ever-recurring happiness to the first of us and the last of us, and a sign from Thee, and give us sustenance and Thou art the best of the sustainers." (The Qur'an, 5:112-114.)

This promise is fulfilled as regards present-day Christendom, with a severe warning in the following verse:

قَالَ اللَّهُ إِنِّي مُنْزِلُهَا عَلَيْكُمْ ۖ
فَمَنْ يَكْفُرْ بَعْدَ مَنكُم فَأَنِّي أُعَذِّبُهُ عَذَابًا لَّا
أُعَذِّبُهُ أَحَدًا مِّنَ الْعَالَمِينَ ۝

"Allāh said: Surely I will send it down to you, but whoever disbelieves afterwards from among you, I will chastise him with a chastisement with which I will not chastise anyone among the nations." (The Qur'an, 5:115.)

As regards the above verses, some commentators think that when Jesus prayed for food it was sent down from Heaven for them, and they all ate of it. This is, however, not correct, for according to the Holy Qur'an, the physical body of man cannot eat any other food than that which is on this earth. And verse 114 makes it clear that the Prophet Jesus did not pray for a temporary supply of food for himself and his disciples, but that a continuous sustenance be provided for his followers. As the verse says: Which should be to us an ever-recurring happiness to the first of us and the last of us.

According to the Holy Qur'an, the promise of Allāh must be fulfilled for every individual person, and, in so far as European Christians are concerned, this has surely been fulfilled; for in comparison with the rest of the world even the poorest of them enjoy a certain amount of luxury and none of them is in want of food.

This was the prophecy of the Prophet Jesus, nearly two thousand years ago, and it is indeed wonderful that we should see it being fulfilled today.

As regards the chastisement which is mentioned in the above verse, surely this has been witnessed to a great extent in the two World Wars, the results of which are still effective today in certain parts of the world, and the ever-present threat of a third and even more terrible world war looming over us. When the Qur'an talks of *Dhú al-Qarnayn* and Gog and Magog it in fact refers to the history of Christian nations in its various phases. I would like to take up this point for discussion now.

EUROPEAN (CHRISTIAN) NATIONS

The journey of *Dhú al-Qarnayn* (Darius) and his contact with *Yájúj* and *Májúj* (Gog and Magog).

Some of my readers may wonder why *Dhú al-Qarnayn* and Gog and Magog (*Yájúj* and *Májúj*) are referred to by our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) when this ancient history is in fact dealt with in the Bible and other scriptures. According to the books of *Hadith* and Traditions, there was once a learned Jew from Syria, who, when he learned that a Prophet had been raised in Arabia, sent messengers to Mecca to test the authenticity of this Prophet, and to determine whether or not he was the Prophet of Truth referred to in the Bible by the Prophets Moses and Jesus. If he were the True Prophet then he would be able to reveal the history and those details regarding *Dhú al-Qarnayn* which are not given in the Bible. This testing of the Holy Prophet is revealed by Alláh in the Qur'anic verses given in this chapter.

The literary meaning of *Dhú al-Qarnayn* is the Two Horned One, or one belonging to two generations or one who dominates two kingdoms.

In the Bible (Daniel 8:20) the vision of the Prophet Daniel is interpreted thus:

"The Ram which thou sawest having two horns are the Kings of Media and Persia."

Much controversy still exists between Muslims and non-Muslims as to who was *Dhú al-Qarnayn*, but my own interest and attention is drawn to the history of the wall built by *Dhú al-Qarnayn*, to keep the savage invaders away from his nation. It is of great interest and importance to find where this wall or barrier now is, for if we can find and identify the wall we also find and identify Gog and Magog (*Yájúj* and *Májúj*).

The reference in the Holy Qur'an to the history of *Dhú al-Qarnayn* speaks of him as being Darius the First. However, earlier Muslim his-

torians speak of *Dhú al-Qarnayn* as Alexander the Great, and give his name as Shah Sikander. But according to the Holy Qur'an, *Dhú al-Qarnayn* received a revelation from Alláh. But Alexander, although he was a great conqueror, was certainly not a great religious person, so it would be wrong to believe that such a man would receive a revelation from Alláh. In fact, the name Sháh Sikander is of Persian origin, and not Greek, as was Alexander. Here is what the Holy Qur'an says on the subject:

وَيَسْأَلُونَكَ عَنْ ذِي الْقَرْنَيْنِ
قُلْ سَأَتْلُوا عَلَيْكُمْ مِنْهُ ذِكْرًا إِنَّا مَكْنُئًا لَهُ فِي
الْأَرْضِ وَآتَيْنَاهُ مِنْ كُلِّ شَيْءٍ سَبَبًا فَاتَّبَعِ
سَبَبًا

"And they ask thee (O Muhammad!) about Dhú al-Qarnayn. Say: I will recite to you an account of him."

"Truly We established him in the land and granted him means of access to everything. So he followed a course." (The Qur'an, 18:83; 84; 85.)

The above verses show quite clearly that Alexander the Great was not *Dhú al-Qarnayn*. Had this been so, there would have been no reason for the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) to be questioned in regard to him. The reason for this being that the history of Alexander the Great and his conquests was already known to the world at that time, and surely there is no point in asking questions on matters of which one is already aware, especially to test the authenticity of prophethood. As for his journey the Holy Qur'an has this to say:

حَتَّىٰ إِذَا بَلَغَ بَيْنَ السَّيِّئَيْنِ وَجَدَ مِنْ
دُونِهِمَا قَوْمًا لَا يَكَادُونَ يَفْقَهُونَ قَوْلًا

"Until, when he reached (a place) between the two mountains, he found, on that side of them, a people who could hardly understand a word." (The Qur'an, 18:93.)

The place mentioned is the border of the Russian and Persian Empires, and the point that they could hardly understand a word means that they did not speak or understand the Persian language. This is according to geographical history.

قَالُوا يٰذَا
الْقَرْنَيْنِ اِنَّ يٰجُوجَ وَمَاجُوجَ مُفْسِدُونَ فِي الْاَرْضِ
فَهَلْ تَجْعَلْ لَكَ خَرْجًا عَلٰۤى اَنْ تَجْعَلَ بَيْنَنَا وَبَيْنَهُمْ
سَدًّا ۝٩٥

"They, (the tribes of Zagros) said: O Dhú al-Qarnayn, Gog and Magog (Slavs and Teutonic) do mischief in the land. May we then pay thee tribute on condition that thou raise a barrier between us and them." (The Qur'án, 18:94.)

The above verse seems to show that those people were a very wild race.

قَالَ مَا مَكْنِيْ فِيْهِ رَبِّيْ خَيْرٌ فَاَعْيُنُوْنِيْ
بِقُوَّةٍ اَجْعَلْ بَيْنَكُمْ وَبَيْنَهُمْ رَدْمًا ۝٩٦ اَنْتُوْنِيْ زَبْرًا حَازِلًا
حَتّٰى اِذَا سَاوَىٰ بَيْنَ الصَّدَفَيْنِ قَالَ انْفُخُوْا
حَتّٰى اِذَا جَعَلَهُ نَارًا قَالَ اَنْتُوْنِيْ اُفْرَعًا عَلَيْهِ قَطْرًا ۝٩٧
فَمَا اسْطَاعُوْا اَنْ يُّظْهَرُوْهُ وَمَا اسْتَطَاعُوْا لَهٗ نُفْبًا ۝٩٨
قَالَ هٰذَا رَحْمَةٌ مِّنْ رَبِّيْ ۚ فَاِذَا جَاءَ وَعْدُ رَبِّيْ جَعَلَهُ
دَكَّآءً ۚ وَكَانَ وَعْدُ رَبِّيْ حَقًّا ۝٩٩

"He said: That wherein my Lord has established me is better. So, if only you help me with strength (of men), I will make a fortified barrier between you and them. Bring me blocks of iron. At length, when he had

filled up the space between the two mountain sides, he said: Blow, till when he had made it (as) fire, he said: Bring me molten brass to pour over it. So they were not able to scale it, nor could they make a hole in it. He said: This is a mercy from my Lord, but when the promise of my Lord comes to pass He will crumble it, and, the promise of my Lord is ever true." (The Qur'án, 18:95-98.)

Gog and Magog, as mentioned in verse 94, are clearly identified in the Bible as the European nations (full explanation given at the end of this chapter) and Dhú al-Qarnayn is identified as Darius the First, the well-known Persian king and prophet and a true follower of the Zoroastrian religion (about 521-485 B.C.), about 156-162 years before Alexander the Great.

The barrier mentioned in verse 96 is the seaward extremity of the Caucasian Wall, otherwise known as Alexander's Wall, to the south of the Caspian Sea. The wall is 50 miles long, 29 feet high in its entire height, and about 10 feet in thickness. With its iron gates and numerous watch towers it formed a formidable defence to the Persian frontier. The mountains mentioned are in Azerbaijan and Armenia.

Verse 98 clearly shows that the barrier was only temporary and that the time would come when these people (Gog and Magog) would be free, and, ultimately the defence wall would crumble down. Concerning the emancipation of these people, it is referred to in the following verse with their subsequent domination of the world:

اِذَا فُتِحَتْ
يٰجُوجَ وَمَاجُوجَ وَهُمْ مِّنْ كُلِّ حَدَبٍ يَنْسِلُوْنَ ۝١٠٠

"And when Gog and Magog (Slavs and Teutonic) are let loose and they shall sally forth from every elevated place." (The Qur'án, 21:96.)¹

1 21:96. Sir Winston Churchill, at a banquet at the Guildhall, London, at the restoration of the effigies of Gog and Magog after the last war, remarked that these represented Anglo-Saxon and Russian races, and for the sake of peace must be kept apart. (See the beginning of this chapter.)

Again, the following verses tell us that when these people become free, they will take Christianity as their religion. It also mentions their disbelief and lack of faith in God. Also their love of this world's life and their mercenary activities and also that they would be the first great industrial nations in the world. Moreover, in Chapter 18 and other chapters of the Holy Qur'an, we are given a clue as to what they will manufacture, and also that their manufactures will bring great destruction to the world:

أَفَحَسِبَ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا أَنْ
يَتَّخِذُوا عِبَادِي مِنْ دُونِي أَوْلِيَاءَ إِنَّا أَعْتَدْنَا جَهَنَّمَ
لِلْكَافِرِينَ نَزْلًا ۖ قُلْ هَلْ نُنَبِّئُكُمْ بِالْأَخْسَرِينَ
أَعْمَالًا ۚ الَّذِينَ صَلَّوْا سَعْيُهُمْ فِي الْحَيَاةِ الدُّنْيَا وَهُمْ
يَحْسَبُونَ أَنَّهُمْ يُحْسِنُونَ صُنْعًا ۚ أُولَٰئِكَ الَّذِينَ
كَفَرُوا بِآيَاتِ رَبِّهِمْ وَلِقَائِهِ فَحَبِطَتْ أَعْمَالُهُمْ فَلَا
نَقِيمَ لَهُمْ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ وَرَنًا ۖ

“Do those who disbelieve think that they can take My servants (Jesus) to be master besides Me? Surely We have prepared hell as an entertainment for the disbelievers. Say: Shall We inform you who are the greatest losers in respect of deeds. Those whose effort goes astray in this world's life and they think that they are making good manufactures. Those are they who disbelieve in the messages of their Lord and meeting with Him. So their works are vain, nor shall We set up a balance for them on the Day of Resurrection.” (The Qur'an, 18: 102-105.)

In another chapter of the Holy Qur'an we are told:

وَقَالُوا اتَّخَذَ الرَّحْمَنُ وَلَدًا ۚ لَقَدْ جِئْتُمْ
شَيْئًا إِدًّا ۚ تَكَادُ السَّمَوَاتُ يَتَّقَطْنَ مِنْهُ ۖ وَتَنْشَقُّ
الْأَرْضُ وَتَخِرُّ الْجِبَالُ هَدًّا ۚ أَنْ دَعَا لِلرَّحْمَنِ وَلَدًا ۚ
وَمَا يَنْبَغِي لِلرَّحْمَنِ أَنْ يَتَّخِذَ وَلَدًا ۚ

“And they say: The Beneficent has taken to Himself a son. Certainly you make an abominable assertion! The heavens may almost be rent thereat and the earth cleave asunder, and the mountains fall down in pieces. That they ascribe a son to the Beneficent. And it is not worthy of the Beneficent that He should take to Himself a son.” (The Qur'an, 19: 88-92.)

This is indeed a harsh statement, but this is how the Holy Qur'an has given the strongest warning to the Christian nations.

EUROPEANS AS GREAT TRADING NATIONS

Returning to still another aspect of the question, the Holy Qur'an goes on to state:

أَمْ حَسِبْتَ أَنَّ أَصْحَابَ الْكَهْفِ وَالرَّقِيمِ كَانُوا مِنْ
آيَاتِنَا عَجَبًا ۖ

“Or thinkest thou that the Companions of the Cave and the inscription were of our wonderful signs?” (The Qur'an, 18: 9.)

The first part of the verse mentions the Cave, and if we study the early history of the European races (Teutonic, Anglo-Saxon and Slavonic) we find that they were primitive cave dwellers until the Romans dominated their land and brought them from the caves and civilized them to Roman standards. They wore little more than loin cloths while the people of the East were dressed in fine silks and ate from silver bowls. Even today pot-holers in the Western countries risk their lives to go into underground caves to search for signs of the early cave dwellers.

This chapter of the Holy Qur'an (verse 18) also mentions that their companions and guardians of the caves were their dogs, and one only has to see these European races today and note the way they dote and fuss over their dogs. Large charity organizations are set up to collect vast sums of money for these animals; the eccentric rich often donate large sums of money or indeed their entire Wills upon death to the welfare of dogs. Many would far sooner donate money to animal charities than to charities for the welfare of the blind, sick, lame or orphans. When old people die of cold, hunger, or neglect, this is simply a "pity", but if a dog should suffer the same fate, this is a "shame" and it is brought to our notice by radio, television, and press, such is the extent to which they love their dogs!

The second interpretation refers to the Christian religion and their monasteries. For, in very early times, they renounced the world for the sake of their religion, living in caves for fear of their enemies. Even today there exist Christian monasteries which are located mostly in secluded places. A study of the early monastic history in Christianity leaves no doubt that this verse of the Holy Qur'an refers to them only.

The second part of the verse, however, tells us that the day will come when these same people will completely discard their religion for the sake of earthly comforts and pleasures, become great business nations in the world because the verse mentions their inscription (Arabic word *Raqim*), meaning the writing of articles of trade.

In this verse (v.9), Allāh asks us if we think it is one of His wonderful signs.

Surely with the proof we have before our eyes today, we have a clear answer to the question to the effect that instead of being a wonderful thing, the present rat-race in the western world is an insult to the dignity of human civilization. In the language of the Holy Qur'an these are the nations who are entirely absorbed in worldly pursuits.

لَّذِينَ ضَلَّ سَعِيَهُمْ فِي الْحَيَاةِ الدُّنْيَا وَهُمْ يَحْسَبُونَ أَنَّهُمْ
يُحْسِنُونَ صُنْعًا ﴿٩﴾

"Those whose effort goes astray in this world's life, and they think that they are making good manufactures." (The Qur'an, 18:104.)¹

In the above verse the Holy Qur'an speaks of the Europeans as being powerful industrial nations who will attempt to conquer nature, and will ultimately bring great destruction to the entire world by their own hands. The following verses of the Holy Qur'an, as well as some sayings of our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!), give us a clue as to what these nations will manufacture as we can ourselves witness today. With reference to the mode of travel the Qur'an says:

وَإِذَا الْعِشَارُ عُطِّلَتْ ﴿٤﴾

"And when the camels are abandoned." (The Qur'an, 81:4.)²

When speaking of this verse, the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) foresaw the abandoning of camels and donkeys for swifter means of travel and transportation, such as are used in the present day. (*Mishkah al-Masābih*, 26: 5.)

وَايَةً لَهُمْ أَنَّا حَمَلْنَا ذُرِّيَّتَهُمْ فِي الْفُلِّ الْمَشْحُونِ ﴿٥﴾
وَخَلَقْنَا لَهُمْ مِنْ مِثْلِهِ مَا يَرْكَبُونَ ﴿٦﴾

"And a sign to them is that We bear their offspring in the laden ship. And We have created for them the like thereof whereon they will ride." (The Qur'an, 36: 41-42.)

1 The Qur'an, 18:104. This verse draws a vivid picture of a world which is so engrossed in its worldly pursuits that it has no time for its spiritual welfare. Our Western civilization today, influenced by the distorted teachings of Christianity, has been caught up in the vicious circle of production and consumption — most of which is artificially created. This rat race, naturally, does not leave any time or thought for God and religion.

2 The Qur'an, 81:4. According to a *Hadith* of the Holy Prophet: "There will come a time when camels will not be used as a means of conveyance." In other words, swifter and more comfortable means of transport will take their place. Lane's Lexicon tells us that *Ishar* (singular '*ushara*') means *she-camels that have gone ten months with pregnancy*. The name "*Ishar*" is still applied to them after delivery. Farazdaq gives this name to milch camels. Such camels were very highly prized. The point that the Holy Qur'an makes here is that even the highly prized kind of camels would lose their value.

The ships that bear man on the seas are spoken of in verse 41. And these were known to man at the time of the Revelation of the Holy Qur'an. But verse 42 speaks of other ships *the like thereof*. These are the bigger ships, submarines and other vessels, and of course the ships that bear man in the air, the airships and the aeroplanes of today.

يَمْعَشَرُ الْجِنَّ وَالْإِنْسَ إِنِ اسْتَطَعْتُمْ
أَنْ تَنْفُذُوا مِنْ أَقْطَارِ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ
فَأَنْفُذُوا لَا تَنْفُذُونَ إِلَّا بِسُلْطَانٍ ۝

"O assembly of Jinn and Men (civilized and uncivilized)! If you are able to pass through the regions of the Heavens and the Earth, then pass through. You cannot pass through but with authority." (The Qur'an, 55:33.)

The above verse gives us a clear prediction of future generations and their developments in space-travel such as we see happening in the world today. As the latter part of this verse makes quite clear, "You cannot pass through but with authority", so whether man succeeds or not is left to the Will of Allāh.

يُرْسَلُ عَلَيْكُمَا شُوَاظٌ مِّنْ نَّارٍ وَنُحَاسٌ فَلَا
تَنْتَصِرُونَ ۝

"The flames of fire and sparks of brass will be sent upon you, then you will not be able to defend yourselves." (The Qur'an, 55:35.)¹

1. The Qur'an, 55:35. According to Lane's Lexicon as well as Bukharī (B. 65:55), *Nuhas* means copper or brass or the sparks that fly from them when it is beaten. Raghīb also agrees with this meaning. Other commentators of the Holy Qur'an have interpreted *Nuhas* as smoke. Some believe that it refers to their chastisement in this world. But a study of the Holy Scriptures shows that such punishments are always spoken of in terms of both the worlds. It is of significance to mention that sparks flowing out of striking metal have always been associated with battle-fields.

This verse refers to the weapons of modern warfare, the atomic and hydrogen bombs, and, as we are well aware, we shall not be able to defend ourselves against these weapons.

One might ask why the Holy Qur'an does not speak more clearly on this matter. The reason for this could be that the people of that day had no literary manifestation, and such a prophecy as this would have been misinterpreted, and the Holy Qur'an warns its readers not to interpret its allegorical language and scientific verses until such prophecies are in some way fulfilled. The following verse makes this perfectly clear to the reader.

هُوَ
الَّذِي أَنْزَلَ عَلَيْكَ الْكِتَابَ مِنْهُ آيَاتٌ مُحْكَمَاتٌ
هُنَّ أُمُّ الْكِتَابِ وَأُخَرُ مُتَشَابِهَاتٌ فَأَمَّا الَّذِينَ
فِي قُلُوبِهِمْ زَيْغٌ فَيَتَّبِعُونَ مَا تَشَابَهَ مِنْهُ ابْتِغَاءَ
الْفِتْنَةِ وَابْتِغَاءَ تَأْوِيلِهِ ۚ وَمَا يَعْلَمُ تَأْوِيلَهُ إِلَّا
اللَّهُ وَالرَّاسِخُونَ فِي الْعِلْمِ يَقُولُونَ آمَنَّا بِهِ
كُلٌّ مِّنْ عِنْدِ رَبِّنَا وَمَا يَذَّكَّرُ إِلَّا أُولُو الْأَلْبَابِ ۝

"He it is who has revealed the Book to thee. Some of its verses are decisive. They are the basis of the Book — and others are allegorical. Then those in whose hearts is perversity follow the part of it which is allegorical, seeking to mislead, and seeking to give it their own interpretation, and none knows its interpretation save Allāh and those firmly rooted in knowledge. They say: We believe in it, it is all from Our Lord and none mind except men of understanding." (The Qur'an, 3:6.)

Unless the reader fully understands the meaning, he should not attempt to make any interpretation. He must leave it to those who will be able to interpret them in their own time.

Some commentators, however, believe that the allegorical verses cannot be interpreted at all, and that only Allāh knows the meaning of them. But Allāh tells us that the Holy Qur'ān is an open book and a guidance to all mankind with no secrets or mystery about it. Man has only to reflect and study it, and the meaning will be clear to him, whether it is anything regarding life on this earth, or the life hereafter.

According to the Holy Qur'ān, its verses must be witnessed and made clear by every generation.

الرَّشِيدِ أَحْكَمَتْ آيَاتُهُ ثُمَّ فُصِّلَتْ مِنْ لَدُنْ
حَكِيمٍ خَبِيرٍ

"I, Allāh, am the Seer. A Book whose verses are characterized by wisdom, then they are made plain, from One, Wise, Aware." (The Qur'ān, 11:1.)

This proves that the allegorical language of the Holy Qur'ān can be interpreted by men of knowledge and understanding and by serious study.

I would like to remind my Muslim readers that according to the *Hadīth* and earlier commentators of the Holy Qur'ān, and also the biographers of our Holy Prophet, when he was receiving revelations from Allāh one after another, our Prophet's mind was filled with great anxiety and fear as to how his followers would interpret and understand these sophisticated messages, and how could he ensure that those revelations would be collected and preserved for future generations. (We must remember here that the Holy Qur'ān was revealed to our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) piecemeal, over a period of 23 years, sometimes in brief verses and at other times in lengthy chapters.) However, Allāh comforted the Holy Prophet and assured him that his anxiety and fear were needless, for his duty was simply to deliver the message. Allāh would ensure that the meaning and explanation of the revelations would be understood by future generations when their knowledge reaches an advanced stage, as seen in the following Qur'ānic verses:

وَأِنْ تَكْذِبُوا فَقَدْ كَذَّبَ أُمَمٌ مِنْ قَبْلِكُمْ وَمَا عَلَى
الرَّسُولِ إِلَّا الْبَلَاغُ الْمُبِينُ

"And if you reject, nations before you did indeed reject (The Truth). And the duty of the Messenger is only to deliver (the message) plainly." (The Qur'ān, 29:18.)

لَا تَحْرِكْ بِهِ لِسَانَكَ لِتَجْعَلَ بِهِ ۖ إِنَّ عَلَيْنَا جَمْعَهُ
وَقُرْآنَهُ ۖ فَإِذَا قَرَأَهُ فَاتَّبِعْ قُرْآنَهُ ۖ ثُمَّ إِنَّ
عَلَيْنَا بَيَانَهُ

"Move not thy tongue therewith to make haste with it. Surely on Us rests the collecting of it and the reciting of it. So when We recite it, follow its recitation. Again on Us rests the explanation of it." (The Qur'ān, 75:16; 17; 18; 19.)

In my own personal study of the Holy Qur'ān I find that a vast number of the verses can hardly be interpreted in this modern age. And it could be that the generations to come will be able to interpret them and to find the true meaning of such verses; for Allāh tells us in the Holy Qur'ān that there will be no more Books from Him, and therefore the Holy Qur'ān must be interpreted by every generation, until this world comes to an end. This is, however, a digression. I will return to the subject under discussion presently. (For note on allegorical verses see Appendix.)

CHRISTIAN ENMITY AND HATRED

There would be strong enmity and hatred among Christian nations according to the Holy Qur'ān, because they have neglected a portion of the Divine covenant. In the words of the Holy Qur'ān:

وَمِنَ الَّذِينَ قَالُوا إِنَّا نَصْرُكَ
أَخَذْنَا مِيثَاقَهُمْ فَنَسُوا حَظًّا مِمَّا ذُكِّرُوا بِهِ فَأَغْرَيْنَا
بَيْنَهُمُ الْعَدَاوَةَ وَالْبَغْضَاءَ إِلَى يَوْمِ الْقِيَامَةِ وَسَوْفَ
يُنَبِّئُهُمُ اللَّهُ بِمَا كَانُوا يَصْنَعُونَ ﴿١٧﴾

"And with those who say: We are Christians, We made a covenant, but they neglected a portion of that whereof they were reminded. So We allowed to stir up enmity and hatred among them to the day of Resurrection. And Alláh will soon let them know (of the consequences) of what they do." (The Qur'án, 5:14.)

This conflict will grow to such dimensions that:

وَتَرْكُنَا بِعَصْفِهِمْ يَوْمَئِذٍ بُيُوتُهُمْ فِي بَعْضٍ وَتُفَجَّرُ
فِي الصُّورِ فَجَمَعْنَاهُمْ جَمْعًا ﴿٩٩﴾

"On that day We shall let some of them surge against others, and the trumpet will be blown. Then We shall gather them all together." (The Qur'án, 18:99.)

This verse clearly points out that they will endeavour to conquer one another and so rush at each other's throats after gaining their material benefits. Then

تُفَجَّرُ فِي الصُّورِ

"The trumpet will be blown." (The Qur'án 18:99.)

This could mean that after much conflict the destruction of war and hatred would act as a final warning and so bring them all together, as the Holy Qur'án states in the last few words of this verse, *Then We shall gather them all together*. The above verses were explained by our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) and recorded in the books of *Hadith* as follows:

"No one will have the power to fight against them." (The *Sahih* of Muslim, 52:20.)

According to another report, *They will drink the water of the whole world.* (Kanz al'Ummál, Vol. 7, p. 2157.) And again, *Alláh said: I have created some of my servants whom no one can destroy but myself.* (Kanz al'Ummál, Vol. 7, p. 3021.) It is true to say that no outside power can overcome the European nations of our day, and this verse also clearly shows that they will be divided into groups and *surge against one another*. And as we can see today, the European nations are, in fact, divided into two major groups. One group still carry the cross around their necks and the other group are nothing more than atheists. Their enmity and hatred have reached such a point that they hold positions in every part of the globe, ready to press the control button and destroy each other with the disastrous weapons manufactured with their own hands.

This is the warning that the Holy Qur'án gives us, when it states that

هُمْ مِّنْ كُلِّ حَدَبٍ يَنْسِلُونَ ﴿٩٦﴾

"they will sally forth from every elevated place." (The Qur'án, 21:96.)

How wonderful it is that we should see the Holy Qur'án's prophecies of 1,400 years ago being fulfilled today.

Surely these facts were not borrowed from the Bible by our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) as some Christians and other non-Muslims seem to think. Also on this point the Prophet Jesus himself made it very clear when he said:

"For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and there shall be famines, and pestilences and earthquakes in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows." (Matthew, 24:7-8.)

And the Holy Qur'án also says:

وَعَرَضْنَا جَهَنَّمَ يَوْمَئِذٍ لِلْكَافِرِينَ عَرَضًا ﴿١٠٠﴾

"And We shall bring forth hell, exposed to view, on that day before the disbelievers." (The Qur'án, 18:100.)

We have seen the veritable hell, miles of flaming columns, in the First and Second World Wars. But who and what will be left to survive the horrible dimensions of this hellish scene of the Third World War?

"This is the very word of the Lord God. I will send fire on Magog and on those who live undisturbed in the coasts and islands, and they shall know that I am the Lord." (Ezekiel, 39: 6.)

The above quotation is from the Bible, and it is obvious, rather a self-evident truth, that these coasts and islands of Magog and *Dajjāl* (Teutronics) are none other than the British Isles and the Scandinavian countries, together with France and Germany. Which other coasts and isles could it be? For where are the other isles and coasts in Europe, whose people are worth mentioning as a world power or whose people dwell carelessly and live undisturbed as do the Britishers and coastal dwellers, who, day by day, are becoming more and more reckless morally? Their new generation indulge in all kinds of immoral and worst sort of perverted pleasures. Even their misguided and polytheistic concept of God (Trinity) is fast disappearing and giving way to Atheism, Apathy and moral Anarchy. Even unnatural behaviour like homosexuality has been legalized by the British Parliament: an abhorrent act for which God destroyed the people of the Prophet Lot. It is even more conclusive evidence of the sins of these careless people of the Isles. Men of ethics and morality hang their heads in shame at the legalization of the most heinous and perverted form of sex orgies which are reported so frequently in the popular newspapers of the country. A further piece of criminal legislation which has been passed by Parliament is the abortion act, whereby it is legal for women to have abortions indiscriminately on the National Health Service, an average of over one hundred thousand such operations are performed in one year, and in many instances even young school-girls have their pregnancies terminated—all this in an effort to curb the rate of illegitimacy. And it is these people of the Isles, who created the state of Israel by double-crossing the Arabs, first having promised them freedom if they fought the Turks, and secondly by betraying the Arabs after victory by enslaving them. Their reason for creating and defending the State of Israel is not because of their love for the Jews, but simply to retain a hold on the Islamic lands, where their vital national interests lie, and most of all because they are unable to forget the power of Muslims in the past, the Arabs in particular.

(For full explanation regarding Gog and Magog, see the following pages and also chapters 5, 6 and 7 for full explanation regarding *Dajjāl*.)

And again the Holy Qur'an tells us:

الَّذِينَ كَانَتْ أَعْيُنُهُمْ فِي غِطَاءٍ عَنْ ذِكْرِي وَكَانُوا لَا يَسْتَطِيعُونَ سَمْعًا ۝

"Whose eyes were under a cover from My reminder, and they could not even hear." (The Qur'an, 18: 101.)

They are so proud of their material achievements and embellishments that they have little or no time for Allāh and His messages. They forget that God has made:

إِنَّا جَعَلْنَا مَا عَلَى الْأَرْضِ زِينَةً لَّهَا لِنَبْلُوهُمْ أَيُّهُمْ أَحْسَنُ عَمَلًا ۝

"Whatever is on the earth an embellishment for it, so that We may try which of them is best in works." (The Qur'an, 18:7.)

The above verse refers to the embellishments of the earth. The massive and wonderful buildings and structures seen in Europe and America today prove this point. Besides, many more vast and beautiful things are made by man in this modern age. However, should there be a Third World War, the devastation and ruin will be such that not even these massive structures will withstand the blow, and all will be reduced to dust. How clearly is this point driven home to us by the Qur'an:

وَأَنَّا لَجَاعِلُونَ مَا عَلَيْهَا صَعِيدًا جُرُثًا ۝

"And we shall surely make what is on it dust, without herbage." (The Qur'an, 18:8.)¹

1 The Qur'an, 18:7-8. These verses lay down a general principle that material progress, if devoid of spiritual awareness, brings in its wake retrogression and ruin. At the same time there is in these verses a prophecy which we are witnessing being fulfilled in our age. The Western civilization has produced so much embellishment on this earth with its beautiful cities and amenities of life that the world has never been so beautiful to live in. Yet the seeds of its destruction can be seen intercut in its very structure. God's words are never untrue. We can see it as a writing on the

And the Holy Qur'an further tells us that after this destruction this nation will never come into power again; as is made clear in the following verse, and this verse is connected with Gog and Magog:

وَحَرَّمَ عَلَىٰ قَرْيَةٍ أَهْلَكْنَاهَا أَنَّهُمْ لَا يَرْجِعُونَ ٥٠

"And it is forbidden to a town which We destroy. They shall not return." (The Qur'an, 21:95.)

Because it is:

الَّذِينَ ضَلَّ سَبِيلُهُمْ فِي الْحَيَاةِ الدُّنْيَا

"Those whose effort goes astray in this world's life." (The Qur'an, 18:104.)

All this destruction has been the consequence of man's own misdeeds:

وَمَا أَصَابَكُمْ مِّنْ مُّصِيبَةٍ فَبِمَا كَسَبَتْ أَيْدِيكُمْ

"(O Man!) And whatever suffering ye suffer, it is what your hands have wrought." (The Qur'an, 42:30.)

wall that, if man's materialistic attitude of life continues to progress at its present rate, the time is not far off when this beautiful world will be rendered to dust without herbage. According to Ch. 17:58.

وَأَنَّ مِّنْ قَرْيَةٍ إِلَّا نَحْنُ مُهْلِكُوهَا قَبْلَ يَوْمِ الْقِيَامَةِ أَوْ مُعَذِّبُوهَا
عَذَابًا شَدِيدًا كَانَ فِي الْكِتَابِ مَسْطُورًا ٥١

"There is not a town but We will destroy it before the day of Resurrection or chastise it with a severe chastisement. That is written in the Book."

This warning is contained not only in the Holy Qur'an, but it occurs also in the Old and the New Testaments. As mentioned in other parts of the book, we have already had a little taste of destruction of civilization during the last two World Wars. What is ominously in store for us in the third war is anybody's guess. The resurrection mentioned in this verse prophesies the destruction or chastisement of only the populous places on this earth. It does not comprehend the whole universe. It need not therefore, be taken as a prophecy concerning the Resurrection of the Day of Judgement.

THE QUR'AN ON GOG AND MAGOG THE EUROPEAN NATIONS IDENTIFIED AS GOG AND MAGOG

In the Bible, Gog and Magog are mentioned in very clear terms, and no doubt is left as to their identity, as shown in the following passage from the New English Bible. (Oxford and Cambridge University Press, 1970.)

"These were the words of the Lord to me: Man, look towards Gog, the prince of Rosh, Meshech, and Tubal, in the land of Magog, and prophesy against him. Say, These are the words of the Lord God: I am against you, Gog, prince of Rosh, Meshech, and Tubal. I will turn you about, I will put hooks in your jaws . . ." (Ezekiel, 38:1-4.)

Here Gog is mentioned clearly, and this Gog is the same as Yájúj of the Qur'an. He is spoken of as "prince of Rosh, Meshech and Tubal". And as for Magog (Májúj), only the land of Magog is spoken of.

Again in the Bible:

"And you, man, prophesy against Gog and say, These are the words of the Lord God: I am against you, Gog, prince of Rosh, Meshech, and Tubal. I will turn you about and drive you, I will fetch you up from the far recesses of the north . . . And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will give unto Gog a place there of graves in Israel . . ." (Ezekiel, 39:1-2; 11.)

The reference made here to "the far recesses of the north" is most interesting; for if we look at a world map we can see that Meshech or Moscow, is situated to the north of Jerusalem.

The three names mentioned in the Bible are Rosh or Russia, Meshech or Moscow, and Tubal or Tobalsk. While Russia is the name of the country and Moscow the name of its capital, Moskva and Tubal are the names of two rivers situated to the north of Mount Caucasus. On the former is situated Moscow, and on the latter Tobalsk. Both of these are famous cities in Russia.

The mention of "graves in the land of Israel" clearly refers to the present day situation when the Anglo-Saxon and Russian races (Gog and

Magog) are involved in the affairs of Israel, and as a result of this involvement are bringing about their own destruction and digging their own graves. (I have explained this at the beginning of this chapter.)

In view of the clearness of the description, no doubt whatsoever is left as to the identity of Gog. And this is the same Gog and Magog mentioned in the Holy Qur'an as *Yájúj* and *Májúj*. The name Gog refers to the Eastern nations of Europe, and Magog refers to the Western nations of Europe.

It is quite clear that these two races inhabited the same land and it is also evident that Gog and Magog were the ancestors of these two races. The Europeans are mainly two races, and these are Slavonic in Eastern Europe, including Russia, and Teutonic in the West — Germany, France, Britain, the Scandinavian countries, America and other white dominated countries. Both are white races, and in very early times these two races intermingled and married into each other as they still do today. (*Vide The Encyclopaedia Britannica.*)

In front of the famous Guildhall in London are two large statues of Gog and Magog which have been there since ancient times and which clearly have great bearing and connection with the ancient forefathers of the dwellers of the British Isles, otherwise why should these ancient statues be revered in such a way, and why should they dominate the chief ancient assembly house, the Guildhall? It may be noted that in Cambridge, England, there are two hills which are called Gog and Magog. Reference to these statues and their importance is given at the beginning of this chapter, when they were reinstalled by Sir Winston Churchill.

If the Bible's reference to Gog and Magog is combined with the historical evidence of the London Guildhall statues, and the naming of the two hills, no doubt remains that these two names are not fictitious, as some European writers suggest, but the names of two very prominent and powerful ancestral races of Europe, who would in time "*sally forth from every elevated place*" (The Qur'an, 21:96) and ultimately dominate and enslave all other peoples of the world, not only would they dominate by their physical and material strength, but by their scientific and technological supremacy.

The Holy Qur'an gives us a clear warning of the domination of these European races, also the downfall of the Muslim nations, and this is surely

proof enough of the authenticity of the Holy Qur'an and of the Truth of Islam.

I would like here to remind my readers of one or two points regarding these two races, as the question may be asked that if these people really are Gog and Magog, why have they not been identified in centuries gone by? There is, however, a straightforward explanation to this, for if we look into the history of other races we find that they retained their original ancestral names, though some races have adopted modified versions, but not so these particular European races, who during the centuries have changed their ancestral names from Gog and Magog, as explained above, to Slavs and Teutonics, then to Anglo-Saxon and Russian races, and now through their ideology are recognized as Capitalist and Communist.

Each change of name has accompanied a different stage in their development, and once they are recognized and accepted by their new name all traces and mention of their previous name and culture are put aside and forgotten, and it is for this reason that they are not recognized as Gog and Magog, and also why there has been so much controversy as to who Gog and Magog really are.

Both their background and the way in which they dominate the world and its people, proves beyond any doubt that they are Gog and Magog (*Yájúj* and *Májúj*).

Above all, another most important hidden fact which must be taken into consideration with regard to these two races, is that they claim to be followers of the teachings of the Bible, and indeed are recognized as such, but in point of fact, how can they do so when the Bible was sent exclusively to the Children of Israel. To my mind, this is another probable reason why no one has taken notice or recognized who they are (Muslims in particular) for in claiming to be followers of the Bible's teachings, their true identity as Gog and Magog is therefore not recognized, I have explained these points more fully in the Appendix and following pages.

Any doubt and confusion in the mind of the reader on reading this book, will be swept away once he has grasped the significance of the above explanation, for this is the essence of the entire book.

APPENDIX

Regarding chapter 18 of the Holy Qur'án, all but two sections of this particular chapter (sections 9 and 10) are related to the history of Christianity and the European nations from their early past. They also contain prophecies about their future, their rise and ultimate destruction.

Verses 94 to 98 identify Gog and Magog as the European nations.

Verses 4, 5 and 102 identify their religion as Christianity.

Verse 104 speaks of them as great industrial nations of the future.

Verse 7 states that they will beautify the earth.

Verse 9 speaks of them as great trading nations.

Verses 99 and 100 state that they would bring great destruction to the world.

Verse 8 says that whatever embellishments they had made would be reduced to dust without harvest.

As stated before, the allegorical verses can be interpreted when a meaning has been made manifest. So it is left to the reader to make his own judgement as to whether they are made manifest or not in our present day. The Holy Qur'án foresaw and foretold that universal calamity would be brought about by the Western Christian nations. And one might well ask why the Holy Qur'án does mention these particular European nations. The reason for this is quite clear: Alláh alone is the Knower of the past, the present and the future. And He knows and tells us that the time would come when these nations would become free and prevail over all the heights of the world. With their material power and false attitude towards life they would sway the world so much that, as the Prophet has said: *No people of the world will have the power to fight them.* (The Sahih of Muslim, 52: 20). They would do all this in order to gain their own material ends, but outwardly in the name of His servant Jesus. But in fact, according to the Holy Qur'án and the Bible, the Prophet Jesus had nothing to do with them, for he was only the prophet towards the Children of Israel. Reference to this can be found in the New Testament:

"These twelve disciples Jesus sent forth and commanded them, saying: Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not, but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel." (Matthew, 10: 5-6.)

The Holy Qur'án also tells us of this in the following chapters: 3: 48, 49; 5: 78; 43: 59. These are just a few. There are, of course, many more references to it in the Holy Qur'án and the Bible.

CHAPTER 5

Prophecies of the Holy Prophet Muhammad about the Present and the Future

(May the peace and blessings of Alláh be upon him!)

The Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) spoke of *Yájúj* and *Májúj* (Gog and Magog) as *al-Masih al-Dajjál*, *Dajjál* meaning liar, group of liars or Antichrist.

The following *Hadith* makes it clear that our Holy Prophet was not the first of Alláh's messengers to predict the appearance of *Dajjál*. Each and every Prophet since the advent of Adam had warned their people of the coming of *Dajjál* at a later date, but as shown in this *Hadith*, the main difference is that Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) gave far more details and a clearer description of the activities and manifestations of *Dajjál*.

'Abdallah, son of 'Umar, says that the Messenger of Alláh stood up among the people, and when he had extolled Alláh in a fitting manner he mentioned the *Dajjál* and said, "I warn you of him, and there is no Prophet who has not warned his people. Noah warned his people, but I shall tell you something about him which no Prophet has told his people. You must know that he is one-eyed. Whereas Alláh is not one-eyed." (The *Sahih* of Bukhárí and the *Sahih* of Muslim.) (*Mishkát-al-Masábih*, Chapter. "Fitnah".)

The Holy Prophet also described their faith and culture as they would appear at a later date and manifest themselves. And he also gave a warning to Muslims to guard against them and to pray to Alláh in their five daily prayers as follows:

عَنْ عَائِشَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ ﷺ كَانَ يَدْعُو فِي الصَّلَاةِ
اللَّهُمَّ إِنِّي أَعُوذُ بِكَ مِنَ عَذَابِ الْقَبْرِ وَأَعُوذُ بِكَ مِنْ فِتْنَةِ
الْمَسِيحِ الدَّجَالِ

'A'ishah (peace be on her!) reported that the Messenger of Alláh used to say in his prayers: O Alláh! I seek refuge in Thee from the punishment of the grave, and I seek refuge in Thee from the tribulations of al-Masih al-Dajjál (the Antichrist). (The *Sahih* of Al-Bukhari, 10: 149.)

Signs of Dajjál

A fuller explanation will be given later of the meaning of *al-Masih al-Dajjál*. There is a vast collection of sayings of the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!), a few of which I shall quote and explain, and, as some of them concern the *Dajjál*, they will prove most helpful in my explanation.

1. Our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) advised his followers that when the time comes and they hear that *Dajjál* exists . . . they must read the first ten and the last ten verses of the chapter al-Kahf (The Cave) of the Holy Qur'an, and they will be saved from the mischief, trials and tribulations of *Dajjál*. [It is, of course, an understood fact that the reading of these portions of the Holy Qur'an has to be done with an understanding of their meaning and with the determination of acting upon them]. (Ibn Májah, *Sunan*, 36:33; Abú Dáwúd, *Sunan*, 36:14; Tirmidhi, *Shamá'il*, 31:59; the *Musnad* of Ahmad, Ch. 6, Vol. 1, p. 446.)

The reason why the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) advised his followers to read these twenty verses of the Holy Qur'an was because these verses speak of the Christian misbeliefs, and, therefore, there is not the least doubt that the tribulation of *Dajjál* means the tribulation of the Christian nations or the materialistic civilization, with which we are faced in the present age.

And the name of Antichrist given to it is due to the fact that it is opposed to the true teachings of Jesus Christ, who never taught the doctrine of sonship, and neither did he teach the doctrine of atonement. The Holy Qur'an gives a clear warning against such a belief. One of the purposes of the advent of the Prophet was :

وَيُنذِرَ الَّذِينَ قَالُوا اتَّخَذَ اللَّهُ وَلَدًا ۚ

To warn those who say Alláh has taken to Himself a son. (The Qur'an, 18: 4.)

أَفَحَسِبَ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا أَنْ يَتَّخِذُوا عِبَادِي مِنْ دُونِي أَوْلِيَاءَ

Do those who disbelieve think that they can take My servants (Jesus) to be master besides Me? (The Qur'an, 18: 102.)

And with regard to the materialistic outlook of life we read in the Holy Qur'an:

الَّذِينَ ضَلَّ سَعْيُهُمْ فِي الْحَيَاةِ الدُّنْيَا وَهُمْ يَحْسَبُونَ أَنَّهُمْ يُحْسِنُونَ صُنْعًا ۝

Those whose effort goes astray in this world's life, and they think that they are making good manufactures. (The Qur'an, 18: 104.)

Some Muslims believe that if they recite the Qur'anic verses relating to *Dajjal* and he hears it, he (*Dajjal*) will run away from them in fear. But I do not think that any sensible person would ever believe that the mere recitation of the Holy Qur'an could turn anyone away in fear. This is simply another of the ancient superstitions which, sad to say, still exist today. The real sense in this belief lies in the fact that their meaning should be understood, for only by understanding the meaning of them can *Dajjal* be identified, and, with this knowledge and understanding, man can protect himself from the corrupt and misleading influence of *Dajjal*, such as the belief in the sonship of the Prophet Jesus. The full meaning of the activities of *Dajjal* are fully explained in the following pages.

2. *When Dajjal appears, his complexion will be white and his right eye will be blind, while the left eye will shine like a bright star. (The Sahih of Al-Bukhari, 77: 68-92; also the Musnad of Ahmad, Vol. 1, pp. 240-374.)*

First of all, generally speaking, the European nations are the only ones with white complexions. And the mention that the right eye would be blind does not mean physical blindness but spiritual blindness with no thought of life beyond the grave, and the left eye shining like a bright star means that they would discover all kinds of earthly treasures, comfort and luxury to such an extent that their spiritual life would be completely neglected by them. Our Prophet said on occasions that man's right side

was heaven and the left side hell. Therefore the brightness of the left eye stands for love of life and luxury which will divert man from the right path and take him to hell. The Holy Qur'an makes the point quite clear when it tells us in the following words:

وَمَنْ كَانَ فِي هَذِهِ أَعْمَىٰ فَهُوَ فِي الْآخِرَةِ أَعْمَىٰ

Whoever is blind in this world will be blind in the Hereafter (The Qur'an, 17: 72.)

Another sign of *Dajjal* is:

3. *On his (Dajjal's) forehead will be written kafir, meaning a disbeliever. Every Muslim will be able to read this whether literate or illiterate. (The Musnad of Ahmad, Vol. 2, pp. 228-250.)*

The words of the above report are metaphorical in so far as saying that only believing Muslims will be able to read what is written on *Dajjal's* forehead, whether they be literate or illiterate.

There are today a vast number of Western Christian missionaries all over the world. In fact, Christianity is the greatest missionary religion in the world. Their success largely depends on their political power and prestige, and the huge financial resources which they command. However, their teachings and doctrines that the Prophet Jesus is God-incarnate does not have much influence on a true Muslim, however illiterate he may be, for Islam is the only true monotheistic religion in the world, and anyone believing in a partner to Allah would immediately be recognized as *kafir* or unbeliever. Hence the saying that every believing Muslim would be able to read and understand the word *kafir* written on the *Dajjal's* forehead, otherwise it is not the law of nature that man or some other animal should be born with something written on his forehead.

4. *"And he (Dajjal) will cure the blind and the lepers and will revive the dead." (Kanz al-'Ummal, Vol. 7, p. 2080.)*

This means that the people under the *Dajjal's* influence would be so advanced in the sciences that they would be able to do things which previously looked impossible.

Anyone giving careful thought to this can see it happening in the world today, as it has been happening for a very long time. The immense healing power of the modern medical profession at times saves lives from the jaws of death. Artificial respiration, transfusion of blood into the body of a dying man, reviving the heart by hand massage when it has stopped beating, and today we even have the transplantation of the vital organs; the heart, kidneys, liver and lungs are taken from a dead body and transplanted into the body of another. Experiments have been made in placing the body of a dead man in deep freeze in the hope of bringing him back to life in 50 years' time. Some degree of success has been achieved with animals. All these instances point out to the *Dajjál's* power of reviving those who are almost dead.

5. *Underneath him (Dajjál) will be a white ass. The length of each one of its ears will be 30 yards, and his one step will be the distance of a day's journey. (Kanz al-'Ummál, Vol. 7, pp. 1998-2104; also Mishkáh al-Masábih, Chapter, Fitnah.)*

This is not the physical strength of an ass, but the material power of a nation, whose cars, trains, ships and every type of aeroplane travel vast distances in only minutes or hours. The 30 yards' length of the two ears of the ass are the wings of the aeroplane, this being of a light and gleaming colour and travelling a day's journey in only one step.

6. *We said: O Messenger of Alláh, how swift will he (Dajjál) travel on the earth? He said: As the cloud is carried on the wind. He, Dajjál, will be jumping about between the heavens and the earth. (Abú Dáwúd, Sunan and Mishkáh al-Masábih.)*

Some Muslim commentators who could never imagine aeroplanes, thought this to be the physical strength of the *Dajjál*. But this in fact refers to the new means of communication by air. Jumping about between the heavens and the earth is a very apt description of jets, rockets and space ships shooting towards the sky. Travel in the air has been as easy for him as the wind carries the cloud away.

7. *The sea will be ankle-deep for him (Dajjál). (Kanz al-'Ummál, Vol. 7, p. 2998.)*

The reference is to the huge passenger ships and submarines. The attempts to lower down small communities of men along with their specially prepared houses on the bed of the sea means that the depths of the waters would become insignificant as if they were only ankle-deep to him.

Again the reference here is not to the physical body of *Dajjál*, as some earlier commentators have suggested.

8. *"He (Dajjál) will then give command to the sky and it will give rain to the earth, and it will produce crops." (Mishkáh al-Masábih, Chapter, Fitnah.)*

Some commentators think *Dajjál* will create rain by his satanic power, but this is not correct. What *Dajjál* will do is to use his material technique to create rain and this is supported by the following newspaper article by the Science Correspondent of the *Daily Telegraph*, London, for 20th August 1969.

The "seeding" of Hurricane Debbie was done by four United States Navy planes, which dumped pounds of silver iodine on clouds in the centre in an attempt to form ice crystals or hail, which would fall to the ground and reduce the force of the storm.

Silver iodine has been used over desert areas for years in rain making attempts. These have been successful sometimes.

In 1948, a hurricane was seeded and promptly divided into two halves.

In 1961, Hurricane Esther was similarly treated.

These results were described to me yesterday by a spokesman for the American weather research department as "encouraging but as yet inconclusive."

The principle behind the use of silver iodine crystals is to give the water vapour clouds in the hurricane a solid surface on which they can condense.

9. *The enemy of Alláh (Dajjál) will make his appearance and with him will be an army of Jews and various kinds of men and women. (Kanz al-'Ummál, Vol. 7, pp. 2028, 2065, 2114, 2116, 2974, 2998.)*

This prophecy of our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) is fulfilled before our eyes today; for if we look to Palestine we can see how the Jews, with the backing of the European and American nations, have been swift to wield force and power over Arab lands. As a result of this, there are today one and a half million Arabs who are homeless, semi-starved and abandoned in the desert with little hope of ever returning to their homeland.

The reason why the Jews are with *Dajjál* is not far to seek, for the Jews possess the money to help the Christian governments and this was well proved in 1956 when England, France and Israel jointly attacked the Suez, violating their agreements with the Arabs.

Then again in 1967 during the Arab-Israeli war, though they did not take part in the actual fighting, they contrived and put into operation a well planned double-cross over the Arabs.

Russia advised the Arabs to prepare to defend themselves as the Israelis were planning to attack, and when they were prepared for the attack from the Israelis, America and Western Europe sought assurances from the Arabs that they would not fire the first shot. When they had been given this assurance by the Arabs, the Israelis were given advice and backing to launch a surprise attack on the Arabs, with the result that in a two-hour battle the Arabs were left with little or no defensive equipment, and within six days the Israelis had occupied a vast amount of Arab land including the whole of Jerusalem.

The question now is who has gained the most benefit from all this? And the answer is, of course, the Russians. They know that the Arabs have little chance to defeat the Jews while Israel is supported by America and Europe, and so the Arabs will become even more dependent on the Russians for military and economic help, and Russia in turn will become the dominant power in Muslim lands.

10. The Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) said: There is no trial and tribulation greater than that of *Dajjál* since the creation of man up to the coming of the Day of Resurrection. (*Mishkáh al-Masábih*; also *Kanz al-'Ummál*, Vol. 7, p. 2028.)

This is because *Dajjál* will stir up dissent and hatred between nations as can be seen happening in the world today. As I have explained at the beginning of chapter four, and also as mentioned in the previous chapter, the Prophet Jesus said:

Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and there shall be famines, and pestilences and earthquakes in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows. (Matthew, 24:7-8.)

This can be seen if we look around in the world today at the poverty, hunger, persecution and cold-blooded murder; for surely there could be no more suffering than there is in the world today. And, as we can see in the results and memories of the two World Wars, the number of armed forces and civilians killed in these wars is vast; for even the number of those killed in the Second World War by the conventional weapons and the atomic bombs totals several millions, and the results and injuries of such warfare are still endured and remembered today.

We can also see that since the Second World War, civil strife has become a common occurrence in most under-developed countries, and the outcome of this is that killings and atrocities are beyond the imagination of any sane human being, and all this can be attributed to the domination of *Dajjál* in the past. The Western leaders, when they talk of destroying human life, talk in terms of millions.

11. *So the world's treasures will follow him (Dajjál) as the bees follow their queen.* (*Mishkáh al-Masábih*, Chapter, *Fitnah*.)

We can all see how the European nations exploit the hidden treasures of the land and sea. Power and prosperity has followed them wherever they have gone. Their control over the world finances has put them in a position of authority to direct the destinies of other nations.

12. *When Dajjál appears and he cannot bring the entire world under his power and machinations and false beliefs . . . the Christian nations will stand with 80 banners or flags in an effort to make peace in the world. But they will, in fact, betray the whole world and bring ultimate destruction to the entire human race.* (*Mishkáh al-Masábih*, Chapter, *Fitnah*.)

In this prophecy there is a reference to the formation of the League of Nations, and later of the United Nations, for the purpose of bringing peace to the world. But time and again Muslims and other nations have been betrayed and blackmailed by these organizations.

After the formation of the League of Nations, Dr. Muhammad Iqbal, the famous poet-philosopher of Pakistan, warned Muslims in these words, "It is not a League of Nations but a League of Thieves, so keep out of it." How right he was! We saw country after country breaking the Charter of the League to suit their respective interests. Today we are seeing the same story being repeated in the United Nations Organization, only on a much larger scale.

After the formation of the League of Nations we had the Second World War, but in 1945 it was changed to the United Nations, and the key to the power of this organization is held by the four great powers in the Security Council. The four great powers themselves are not affected at present, but the smaller and individual nations are greatly affected by the vetoing powers of the permanent members of the Security Council.

It began with the partition of India and Pakistan, as a result of which, over one million people lost their lives and more than twenty million became homeless and destitute, and many of whom still suffer to this present day. With regard to Pakistan, they divided it into two parts with a thousand miles of India in between, leaving Pakistan practically defenceless with no armed forces or money.

Everything was taken by the Indians, not even a typewriter or a piece of paper remained in any of the government offices; indeed, they did not even leave a desk, chair or table. If by chance they were forced to leave anything, they made sure that it would be of no use to the Pakistanis.

Are the western powers so afraid of Islam that they have to keep the Islamic countries in a constant state of broil and intrigue?

The way in which Pakistan has been divided into the East and the West sections is a glaring example of this kind of diplomacy. Let us not be fooled by their boasting and bragging that their justice is the finest in the world. Certainly it is the best when it is they themselves who benefit from it, or when it concerns their own kind.

This was proved by the situation in Rhodesia, when Mr. Ian Smith gave his Unilateral Declaration of Independence (U.D.I.). Had this decision been made by a coloured leader, we can be sure that armed forces would have been sent in haste to crush the rebellion, and the leaders charged with treason, and no doubt executed for treason. But as Mr. Smith is white, no such drastic steps are taken.

Then there is Kashmir, where millions of Muslims gave their sweat and blood, and, indeed, their lives, as a result of the dirty work and the double-crossing by this "league of thieves" with their vetoing at the United Nations. Hyderabad and Junagardh repeat the same tale of woe for the Muslims. (Readers wishing to know more of this should refer to Hector Bolitho, *Jinnah*, London, 1954.)

Next, we have Algeria, at the hands of the French, and where the blood of Muslims flowed in the streets and they were murdered at random, at their work and in their homes. Mass graves were discovered with the bodies of hundreds of men, women and children who were either murdered or buried alive. Young children, not old enough to understand or realize what war was about, were tortured and killed, and women, even in pregnancy, were raped and tortured like animals. Homes were burned to the ground and their families divided and cast out into the desert, starving and homeless, while more than a million others were forced to seek refuge in other countries.

The real facts, however, are even more gruesome, and there is much which will never be known.

~~Could there be any trial and tribulation greater than that which these people have suffered at the hands of Dajjāl?~~

We may look also to the entire Middle East, Far East and North Africa, in particular, Palestine, Tunisia, Malaya, Indonesia and Asia Minor, where some sixty million Muslims still suffer as a result of the intrigues of the western powers and Russia (see Chapter 12).

Many non-Muslims also suffer, as we have seen in Japan, China, Korea, Tibet, Vietnam and the South-East Asian countries where the number of dead and injured is far beyond the comprehension of any sane and civilized person.

The racial violence and killings in America, and the terrible incidents in Sharpeville, South Africa, the murders and atrocities which were committed there will never be forgotten, as will none of the violence and killings in Kenya, Rhodesia, the Congo, Angola, Nigeria and other countries of Africa. Talking of America, it is estimated that over 30 million Red Indians were slaughtered by the white European settlers during the takeover period of their lands, as a result of which the American Indian of today is little more than a beggar in his own land.

If we turn our attention to Europe itself, we can see what happens in the so-called peacetime—in Poland, Hungary and in the divided city of Berlin, where people dare not think aloud or speak freely. Then there are the millions of people in the Communist satellite countries who are forced to live in slave camps. Millions of innocent people have been killed and millions more still suffer all over the world. And all this suffering can be said to be due to the western maniacal enthusiasm, both in the past and the present, to dominate the world. But even with all this terrible suffering, peace is still as far away as ever, and as long as these people hold world power in their hands, peace will not prevail; for they are continuously making mischief against one another, just as we have been warned in the Holy Qur'an and *Hadith* that they would do.

The suffering and destruction that could be created by a third world war, which will be a nuclear war, does not bear thinking about, and if we look into world history we find that the entire human race has never before suffered as it has done at the hands of the European nations.

This is what our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) meant when he said that people would endure great sufferings at the hands of *Dajjāl*.

How gratifying it is that we should have been told of this so many years ago, and how sorrowful that no one pays heed to it!

13. *The last to follow him (Dajjāl) will be the women and illegitimate children.* (*Kanz al-'Ummāl*, Vol. 7, pp. 2116, 2998.)

This means that *Dajjāl* will influence women in such a way that they will become free of any moral code or law and so be free to act and do as they please, as can be seen in the cities and towns of Europe and America today.

In a London women's weekly this is how the comment was made on the commandment of the Bible that *Thou shalt not commit adultery*:

"But this precept is disobeyed right and left, and the skies do not fall. People who find out about, or get told—for the promiscuous are seldom discreet—usually are not even shocked. The modern biological approach says that you can't expect anybody to make do with only one partner all their lives." (See also Appendix.) (*Women's Own*, London, for 15th December 1962, p. 18.)

This attitude towards sex has resulted in the tremendous increase of illegitimate children. According to a report in *The Times* of London every eighth child in London is illegitimate. This could perhaps also be said about Paris, New York and other big cities of Europe and America. (*The Times* for Saturday, 29th December 1962, p. 4. *Vide* report for 1961 of the London County Council's Medical Officer, Dr. J. A. Scott.)

Whatever part of the world they dominate, whether it be that they live there temporarily or permanently, they practise their immoral vices. Women mix indiscriminately with the opposite sex, dress in semi-nude fashions, and whether young or old, display their sex in such a way that hardly anyone can fail to take notice of them, from a young schoolboy to an aged man. Great emphasis is put on sex and on programmes of almost nude dances by cinema and television, and of course in the theatre and the gambling clubs. They have now reached the stage when they appear completely naked before large theatre audiences, and even the sex act itself is performed on stage. Public advertisements, newspapers, books and magazines display naked girls in their pages. Both sexes of all ages dance and swim together quite freely, and the drinking, gambling and free love-play whether in private or in public are the cause of the ever increasing number of illegitimate children in Europe and America today; the number is increasing so rapidly that perhaps in years to come it will be difficult to find a child who is not illegitimate. At times their free love-making reaches the stage when they act like lower class animals, and there appears to be no law in force which can ensure proper control over such a behaviour while even a small interference or disturbance in other spheres of life could quite easily lead to a court case with the claiming of costs and damages.

According to the periodical surveys held by the British Press as well as by the churches, the number of girls who are pregnant at the time of

MORALIZING

marriage is rapidly on the increase, at present the number is seven out of ten, and the number of those who have had sexual relations before marriage without conceiving children is probably much higher. There are, in fact, cases where girls under the age of fifteen are pregnant while still attending primary school. In 1969 eleven girls of twelve years of age gave birth to babies. Indeed, many girls of this age consider it something of an honour to boast about the number of boys and men with whom they have had sexual relations.

Instead of making some effort to control such behaviour amongst the young, many local authorities are now showing films on birth and sex, and some schools have made it a part of their curriculum. They think that to show eleven year old children the act of copulation between man and woman will give them more respect for the human body and the sex act and that they will cease to play and practise it, but this is ridiculous. Children are at school to learn and they will put into practice that which they have learned. Most of them already know about the sex act and have been carrying it out, and to add it to the school curriculum is simply encouraging them and showing them how it is performed by adults. Every child from a very early age is ever ready to copy that which its parents do or say, and with this present sex education in schools we shall no doubt very soon reach the stage when the very young would begin giving sex lessons to their parents.

In certain countries where the Europeans have dominated and converted the inhabitants to Christianity, the rate of illegitimacy is as high as 80 per cent. But when they have taught the so-called European civilization and culture to the "backward" people, what more could one expect?

Even with their wealth, luxury and education, there is perhaps more robbery, murder and gangsterism in the western countries than in any other part of the world; and careful consideration of this problem will show that women and alcohol are the root cause of all this vice, and it is with the help of these and other such temptations that *Dajjál* is succeeding in leading people astray from the right path of virtue.

This evil is spreading all over the world to such an extent that the day is not far distant when every nation, including Muslim nations, will be under its terrible influence; for certain Muslim countries have already

adopted some of the European vices. Our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) warns us of this when he tells us:

"The last thing to follow Dajjál will be the women."

And it is also against the teachings of their Lord Jesus. He said:

"That women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety, not with braided hair, or gold or pearls or costly array." (Timothy I, 2-9.)

How wonderful that the words of our Holy Prophet, spoken 1,400 years ago, should be fulfilled in our day, and surely these were not the words of any imposter, as some Christian writers have suggested.

14. *When Dajjál appears, the women will assume the appearance of men, and the men will assume the appearance of women. (Kanz al-'Ummál, Vol. 7, p. 2998.)*

This is not only seen in Europe and America, but in all those parts of the world which have adopted the Western culture. In every street can be seen women with short hair and wearing men's fashions, and men so clean-shaven and with long hair that at times it is difficult to distinguish one from another.

15. *And, when Dajjál appears, there will be no part of the world left which he will not dominate, except the cities of Mecca and Medina. (Kanz al-'Ummál, Vol. 7, pp. 2028, 2988-2991.)*

Anyone reading the story of these two cities will find that ever since the appearance of our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!), not one single non-Muslim or Christian missionary has set foot in the two Holy cities of Islam and neither will they do so in the future. This surely is something of a miracle and I will explain later how the Holy Cities of Mecca and Medina have been saved from the hands of *Dajjál* in our day. No one can deny that he has seen *Dajjál*, no matter in what part of the globe he may live; for he has seen and been in contact with the Europeans and their agents.

16. *Whoever hears about Dajjál should keep away from him. By Alláh! One will come to him and he (the Muslim) will think that he (Dajjál) is a believer, but he will follow him (Dajjál) on account of the doubts that he will raise in his mind. (Kanz al-'Ummál, Vol. 7, p. 2057.)*

As regards the above quotation, any true believing Muslim who has been in contact with the European agents abroad will clearly understand the way in which they work to spread their influence. By their sweet talk, free gifts and promises and the smooth way in which their institutions are run. Even if they cannot convert people to their way of life, they manage to put doubts in their minds and divert them from their own original faith.

17. *There will be some people accompanying Dajjál, who will say: We keep him (Dajjál) company. Although we know that he is an unbeliever, we still keep his company so that we may eat his food.* (Kanz al-'Ummál, Vol. 7, 2092.)

This is a warning for the Muslims of today, for some of them are slaves of their bellies and others are slaves to their passions. They are well aware that the European culture, as it is today, is rotten, yet they continue to indulge in it and its vices, enjoying their immorality and dancing to the music of Dajjál.

Not only those who live in European countries, but also those in their own countries practise the so-called European civilization, namely, indulgence in sex, drinking, dancing, gambling and gradually discarding their own moral and cultural values; yet they still call themselves Muslims and, in so doing, they bring shame and disgrace upon Islam.

Today, many Muslim women wear semi-nude clothes and parade in bathing costumes and dance freely with the opposite sex.

The words of our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) have once again been well and truly proved, when he said on one occasion:

Large numbers of my followers will follow Dajjál. (Mishkáh al-Masábih, Chapter, Fitnah.)

Though the Holy Qur'án has never said that women's faces must be veiled and that they should live in seclusion, as some Muslims think and practise, certainly it has never allowed that women should display their bodily charms such as is done in the European culture. This is entirely out of the question in the Islamic culture.

I give here two self-explanatory *Hadith* of the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) regarding the state of world affairs which would prevail at the time of Dajjál, and which we can see taking place in the world today.

The translation is as follows:

Ibn Abbas (may Alláh be pleased with him!) narrated, "The Holy Prophet (peace be on him!) said, 'Prayers will be neglected, carnal desires will be pursued, transgressors will become leaders, it will not be possible to distinguish the truthful from the false, telling lies will become desirable, payment of Zakáh will be taken as a burden, the believer will be deemed the most disgraceful and he will be pained at seeing evils (all around) and his heart will melt as salt in water but he will not be able to say anything. Rain will do no good, it will fall out of season. Males will commit adultery with males, and females with females. Women will dominate. The offspring will disobey their parents, friend will treat his friend badly, sins will be taken lightly. Mosques will have external decorations and beauty and there will be worshippers too but there will be hypocrisy and (mutual) enmity in their hearts. Then will appear a people from the West (Maghrib) who will dominate the weak amongst my people. People will produce (copies of) the Holy Qur'án in letters of gold but will not act upon it. The Qur'án will be recited in a melodious way. Usury will become rampant. Human blood will have no value, religion will have no helpers. Singing women will be on the increase. The rich will perform the Hajj as a pastime. The people of the middle class will do so to conduct business and the poor to beg (for charity).'" (The Mudkhal of Ibn al-Hajj.)

Abú Hurayrah (peace be on him!) reported the Messenger of Alláh as saying, "When the booty is taken in turn, property given in trust is treated as spoil, zakáh is looked on as a fine, learning is acquired for other than a religious purpose, a man obeys his wife and is unfilial towards his mother, brings his friend near and drives his father far off, voices are raised in the mosques, the most wicked member of a tribe becomes its ruler, the most worthless member of a people becomes its leader, a man is honoured through fear of the evil he may do, singing girls and string instruments [i.e. modern guitars and pop music] make their appearance, wines are drunk, and the last members of this people curse the first ones, look at that time for a violent wind, an earthquake, metamorphosis, pelting rain, and signs following one another like bits of a necklace falling one

after the other when its string is cut." (Tirmidhí, *Shamá'il*.) (*Mishkáh al-Masábih*, Chapter, *Fitnah*.)

Some Muslims believe that when *Dajjál* appears at a later date, he will fulfil all his works by his physical strength and that he will dominate the world entirely in forty days. Then Jesus will come from Heaven to slay him, and break the cross. Before taking up this subject for detailed discussion I would like to discuss the meaning of *al-Masih al-Dajjál*. (For full significance of 40 days, please see chapter 7.)

APPENDIX

It is not only the modern biological approach to sex which is wrong, but there are also signs that the new Christian approach towards sex morality is taking the same wrong line. In a report called "Towards a Quaker View of Sex" (published by the Friends' Home Service Committee, London) the Church's traditional attitude to sexuality throughout the centuries is critically examined and even occasionally rejected. Some church dignitaries condemned the report, but there were others, like the Archdeacon of London, the Ven. George Appleton, who welcomed it (*The Observer*, London, for 17th February 1963.)

More than 70,000 copies of a "revolutionary handbook" for children aged 10 and upwards, which tells them how to defy school discipline, make love, set up shop with contraceptives, get an abortion or indulge in sexual deviations, were placed with booksellers and also offered to pupils outside schools. The book includes a guide to drugs, and while warning of the dangers, says:

"Being high can be fun, but don't count on working or learning anything while the sensation lasts."

"*The Little Red Schoolbook*" as it is called, created a sensation in Denmark towards the end of 1969 and has since sold hundreds of thousands of copies in France, Germany, Holland, Norway, Sweden, Finland and Switzerland.

The English edition, revised to include the public school and other specifically British systems, advises pupils to read comics, thrillers or pornographic magazines under the desk if their teachers are boring. It tells them how to opt out of religious education.

It says that every school should have a contraceptive machine. If the school refuses to install one, the boys and girls should get together to start their own contraceptive shop.

It warns girls to remember, if they want to get an abortion, that they must start as soon as they discover they are pregnant.

Other chapters advise the children to boycott lessons together when they have a grievance and move the desks if they do not like the way they are arranged in class. (*The Sunday Telegraph* and *Daily Telegraph*, London, for 28th and 29th March 1971.)

Sex education is responsible for the rise in juvenile delinquency and for the increase in promiscuity, Dr. Louise Eickhoff, a consultant child psychiatrist, said in a report issued recently.

Her finding is based on an investigation of delinquents she examined in the course of her work before and after sex instruction was introduced at schools.

She says that in the early 1950s, when sex education was almost non-existent, juvenile delinquency was the outcome of defects in inheritance, family background and personal stress.

In 1969-70, cases she examined showed sex education to be a more powerful cause of delinquency resulting in breakdown of children with normal constitutions and good upbringing.

She says that 40 per cent of girls in her survey were delinquent after receiving sex instruction and claims that sex education has lowered the peak age for delinquency in girls from 16 to 15.

Dr. Eickhoff, who was a prominent critic of the BBC's sex education programmes, says in her report that sex education is personally undesirable.

"It destroys adolescence and plunges the child into adult sex knowledge, adult urges and cravings before the child's system of self-discipline is correspondingly strong.

"It can increase interest in adult sexual matters, creating an appetite for everything connected with that side of life, including pornography and information about normal and abnormal practices." (*Daily Telegraph*, London, 27th July 1971.)

The meaning of al-Masih al-Dajjal or Anti-christ

The meaning *al-Masih al-Dajjal* according to the Arabic dictionary

The word *Dajjal* is derived from *Dajala*, which means "he covered" (a thing). The *Lisán al-'Arab* gives several views why *Dajjal* is so called. One view is that he is so called on account of his being a liar and covering or concealing the truth with falsehood. Another is that he will cover the earth with the largeness of his numbers. A third is that he will cover the people with unbelief, and with his knowledge will discover things never before discovered. And a fourth, that he will spread over and cover the whole earth. Still another view is that *Dajjal* is a community that will carry about its merchandise all over the world. In other words, it will cover the earth with its articles of trade. And, finally, there is the view that *Dajjal* has been given this name because he will say things which are contrary to what is in his mind. This means he will cover his real intentions with false words.

Masih means Messiah, the sacred name given by Alláh in the Holy Qur'an to the Prophet Jesus, and *Dajjal* will carry out his tasks in the name of this holy man but in complete opposition to his teachings; for, whereas the true Messiah preached these words: "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God and Him only shalt thou serve" (Matthew, 4:10), *Dajjal* will put the Messiah in the position of God. Whereas the true Messiah taught that all prophets of Alláh came into the world sinless, fulfilled their missions and died sinless, the *Dajjal* will condemn all this in preaching that they were in fact sinful.

The true Messiah also preached that every man will stand before Alláh and will be rewarded or punished according to his deeds. The *Dajjal*, however, will preach that the son of Mary suffered crucifixion to cleanse the sins of the entire world. Even Mary, the innocent mother of Jesus, is not free from the blasphemous lies of *Dajjal*, and this is what is meant in saying that *Dajjal* is Antichrist.

Through my studies of the earlier history of Islam I have come to the conclusion that the earlier Muslim commentators, because of their being far removed from the age of *Dajjal*, could not appreciate the full meaning and import of the Holy Qur'an and *Hadith* with regard to the

appearance of *al-Masih al-Dajjal*. This may also be due to the fact that the Christian converts to Islam were, at that time, the most learned people in a Muslim community, and the beliefs introduced by them became current in the minds of Muslims of those days. I shall explain later the basic beliefs and doctrines of Christianity and the Bible.

Another interpretation of theirs with which I cannot agree is that they have taken *Dajjal* as a single person instead of accepting this term standing for a group of people.

Through these mistakes the entire Muslim world has had to pay the price and suffer a great deal at the hands of the European Christian nations during the last almost three and a half centuries; for they have suffered spiritually, physically and mentally and still do suffer, and only God knows when this suffering will end. But whatever suffering we Muslims have had to suffer is only by way of mercy from Alláh, in so far that it teaches us all a lesson, both for ourselves and our future generations.

The Qur'an tells us that man only learns his lesson by trial and tribulation.

فَاَخَذْنَاهُمْ بِالْبَاسِ وَالضَّرَّاءِ لَعَلَّهُمْ يَتَضَرَّعُونَ ﴿٦٩﴾

"We (Alláh) seized them with distress and affliction in order that they might humble themselves." (The Qur'an, 6:42.)

اَخَذْنَا اَهْلَهَا بِالْبَاسِ وَالضَّرَّاءِ لَعَلَّهُمْ يَضُرَّعُونَ ﴿٧٩﴾

"We (Alláh) seized its peoples with distress and affliction that they might humble themselves." (The Qur'an, 7:94.)

The Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) also warns us in the book of *Hadith*. When on his last visit to Mecca, he told his followers in his last sermon there that he was leaving them with two things: firstly, the Book of Alláh, the Holy Qur'an, and secondly his practice (*Sunnah*) and that as long as Muslims kept these two things they would never go astray. But should Muslims neglect them they will be punished and perish as others have done when they have gone astray. The clearest warning of this comes in the following verse of the Holy Qur'an and it is a warning

to the Muslims; for those who stray from the path of Allāh will not be saved from punishment just because they are Muslims. Indeed, their punishment may be even more severe when they neglect the truth and the guidance of Allāh.

وَإِذَا وَقَعَ الْقَوْلُ عَلَيْهِمْ أَخْرَجْنَا لَهُمْ دَابَّةً مِّنَ الْأَرْضِ تُكَلِّمُهُمْ أَنَّ النَّاسَ كَانُوا بِآيَاتِنَا لَا يُوقِنُونَ ٢٧

"And when the word comes to pass against them, We shall bring forth for them a creature from the earth (Dābbah al-Ard) that will speak to them, because people did not believe in Our messages." (The Qur'ān, 27:82.)

This verse will also be fully explained later on.

Praise be to Allāh that He fulfilled the prophecy of His Holy Book, and also that He fulfilled the prophecy of His blessed Prophet of almost fourteen hundred years ago. We cannot ignore these prophecies, for they have been witnessed in the two world wars and the ever-present threat of a third world war looming over our heads.

One might ask why the Holy Qur'ān should condemn Dajjāl and his followers when they have done and discovered so much for the benefit of mankind. The Holy Qur'ān is not against the material and scientific progress. On the contrary, it draws the attention of its readers to the fact that one of the objects of the creation of man is the conquest of nature. I quote below two of the many verses of the Qur'ān in this context:

وَسَخَّرَ لَكُم مَّا فِي السَّمٰوٰتِ وَمَا فِي الْأَرْضِ جَمِيعًا مِّنْهُ ۗ إِنَّ فِي ذَٰلِكَ لَآيَاتٍ لِّقَوْمٍ يَّتَفَكَّرُونَ ١٣

"And He has made subservient to you whatsoever is in the Heavens and whatsoever is in the earth, all from Himself. Surely there are signs in this for a people who reflect." (The Qur'ān, 45:13.)

أَلَمْ تَرَ أَنَّ اللَّهَ سَخَّرَ لَكُم مَّا فِي السَّمٰوٰتِ وَمَا فِي الْأَرْضِ وَأَسْبَغَ عَلَيْكُمْ نِعَمَهُ ظَاهِرَةً وَبَاطِنَةً ۚ

"Do ye not see that Allāh has subjected to your use all things in the Heavens and on the earth and has made His bounties flow to you in exceeding measure (both) seen and unseen?" (The Qur'ān, 31:20.)

What the Holy Qur'ān actually condemns is not the mastery of the physical universe but the lop-sided attitude of life where faith in God becomes extinct. Instead of becoming the servants of Allāh in practical life man has started claiming Divinity for himself. If such people worship anything, they worship human power or the collective power of their community or nation. This is true of Russia as well as America. At this juncture it must be made clear that the Holy Qur'ān does not mention the name Dajjāl, but speaks of Yájúj and Májúj (Gog and Magog). At another place, it uses the words Dābbah al-Ard (creature from the earth) for the same people. This word and its connection with Yájúj and Májúj will be explained later.

We may ask ourselves why the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) should describe the Christian nations of this age as *al-Masih al-Dajjāl*, when in his time, the Christians dominated half the civilized world and he himself had a great respect for their religion. The reason is that the Holy Prophet foresaw the day when his followers would dominate the Christians and reduce their power considerably, as stated in the Traditions of the Holy Prophet. The Holy Prophet saw a vision at the Battle of Ahzáb, in which Allāh had given him the key to the Roman and Persian Empires. He immediately told his followers of the vision and its meanings — that they would dominate these empires in due course.

This prophecy was fulfilled within one century after the death of the Prophet. And, if we look into Islamic history, we shall find that the Muslims did, in fact, dominate to a great extent, both the East and the West. In the East, they dominated to the borders of China, and in the West, to the gates of Paris and Vienna. They ruled these parts of the world for over a thousand years until the Europeans took over in the 18th-19th centuries.

Our Prophet also foresaw by his spiritual knowledge that another kind of Christianity would appear at a later date, and that it would take on entirely different forms in different parts of the world in spite of the fact that they would still be using the name of Jesus the Messiah to coin this new kind of Christianity, while in practice they would distort his original teachings altogether.

As we can see, these new forms of Christianity sprang from Europe in the 16th-17th centuries, and anyone looking carefully into their history can see how the European nations gained their political supremacy in the name of their religion, with the careful organization of their religious missionaries and placing themselves on a pedestal as The Great White Father. And it is quite evident from past and present-day conditions how these European nations work.

First, they send their religious missionaries abroad to bribe and convert the people. Next comes their business activities and, when they have gained the sympathy and confidence of the people, they appoint their own European governors and military missions, with the result that they soon become complete masters of these countries and their peoples. (See Appendix to this chapter.)

It is, however, surprising that they go to the trouble of converting the coloured or the black man to their religion, for should these dark-skinned converts wish to enter their churches they are at several places ridiculed or turned away.

And this is why our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) gave them the name of *al-Masîh al-Dajjâl*, as I have explained earlier in the book.

According to the Qur'anic and the Holy Prophet's prophecies, after this destruction, Islam would spread all over the world and peace would prevail; for in Islam all men are equal regardless of race, colour or creed, for all are the servants of Allâh, the One and Supreme God.

The following Qur'anic verses remind us of this :

هُوَ الَّذِي أَرْسَلَ رَسُولَهُ بِالْهُدَىٰ وَدِينِ الْحَقِّ
لِيُظْهِرَهُ عَلَى الدِّينِ كُلِّهِ وَلَوْ كَرِهَ الْمُشْرِكُونَ ﴿٣٠﴾

"He it is Who sent His Messenger with guidance and the Religion of Truth, that He may cause it to prevail over all religions, though the polytheists are averse. (The Qur'ân, 9: 33.)

هُوَ الَّذِي أَرْسَلَ رَسُولَهُ بِالْهُدَىٰ وَدِينِ الْحَقِّ
لِيُظْهِرَهُ عَلَى الدِّينِ كُلِّهِ وَلَوْ كَرِهَ الْمُشْرِكُونَ ﴿٣٠﴾

"He it is Who has sent His Messenger with the guidance and the Religion of Truth, that He may make it prevail over all religions. And Allâh is enough for a witness. (The Qur'ân, 48: 28.)

These verses clearly predict the prophecies of the future, and we may wonder about the state of the world in which we live today, and the downfall of the Muslim nations in particular. It may be beyond the comprehension of many Muslims and non-Muslims as to how Islam will be able to overtake all other world religions and ideologies, but the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) clearly predicted just how this would happen. Some of the present day Muslim scholars, contrary to the popular belief, think that it will not be through the physical re-appearance of Jesus that these prophecies will be fulfilled. Similarly they have rejected the age-old theory of a *Mehdî* popularly associated with divine authority and supernatural powers. According to their way of thinking, reliance on the advent of Jesus or a *Mehdî* is robbing the Muslims of their own initiative to remedy their faults and is destroying their moral courage and capacity of understanding. These interpretations also hinder them in their struggle to overcome the enemies of Islam and ultimately hinders the spread of Islam.

Furthermore, it is quite illogical to believe that someone will come to future generations with the divine power to make Islam prevail over all other religions. It is probably due to these interpretations that a few supposedly divine Messiahs or *Mehdis* have been raised in the Islamic world in the past 1,400 years, but, as we can see, no one has succeeded in making Islam prevail over all other religions. Instead we see the creation of disunity and disorder in the Islamic societies. But no matter what Muslims may interpret or preach, it can make no difference to Allâh for He has His own plan, He has no need of helpers for He is the sole Master. As I have shown my readers in chapter four, where I have given four

Qur'anic verses (warning to the Jews), Allāh has not created anything without motive, man in particular, and how Allāh will fulfil His motivation of creation. This can be seen in the following *Hadīth*:

Anas reported the Messenger of Allāh as saying: The least of the signs of the last hour (i.e. the hour of the destruction of material civilization and spiritual resurrection of mankind) will be a fire which will gather mankind together from the East and the West. (Mishkāh al-Masābīh, Chapter, Fitnah, quoted from the Sahīh of Bukhārī.)

The prophecy of this *Hadīth* has to some extent been fulfilled, as mankind has already sampled a taste of this fire in the two world wars, and as a result has to some extent come closer together to discuss and settle their differences, for example through the United Nations. But the fire of the atomic and hydrogen bombs which would be used in a third world war would indeed be catastrophic for entire mankind, and when mankind tastes the effects of this deadly fire they are bound to gather together and develop a new mentality and humble themselves. As Allāh tells us in the Holy Qur'an, 18:99. *Then We shall gather them (Mankind) all together.* Mankind will then search for the Truth, this Truth being no other than Islam because Islam is a natural religion.

According to the Holy Qur'an, man only humbles himself after he has tasted distress and affliction:

أَخَذْنَا أَهْلَهَا بِالْبِأْسَاءِ وَالضَّرَاءِ لَعَلَّهُمْ يَضُرَّعُونَ ﴿٩٩﴾

We (Allāh) seized them with distress and affliction in order that they might humble themselves. (The Qur'an, 7: 94.)

This is perhaps the greatest of all the prophecies which have yet to be fulfilled.

After the fulfilment of this prophecy, when Islam would have prevailed over the world, Allāh says in the Holy Qur'an:

يَوْمَ تَبْدَلُ الْأَرْضُ غَيْرَ الْأَرْضِ وَالسَّمَوَاتُ

"On the day when the earth will be changed into a different earth. And the Heavens (as well)." (The Qur'an, 14:48.)

The Meaning of Yájúj and Májúj

Yájúj (Gog) and Májúj (Magog) are derived from *Ajj* or *Ajij* in the forms of Yájúul and Májúul, and *Ajj* means "the flaming fire", but *Ajja* also means *Asra'a*, meaning "he walked fast". This is the meaning given in the *Lisán al-'Arab*.

Imam Raghib says that Yájúj and Májúj have been compared to flaming fire and surging water because of their intense agitation; therefore it can be gathered that *Dajjál* and Yájúj and Májúj are the same people with two different functions. The former will make religious mischief in the world and the latter will make mischief by political and military power. In so far as religious mischief is concerned, this has been greatly reduced; for almost three-quarters of them are no less than atheists, and the others, instead of being devoted to their faith and Church, prefer to indulge in the vices I have mentioned earlier.

The Church congregations gradually get smaller and smaller and the priests or clergymen have to visit factory workshops and appear on television and radio in the hope of stimulating some interest in the people regarding their religion.

I now turn to their religious teachings abroad; for even those people who have been converted to Christianity are gradually discarding this religion and forming their own separate organizations and religious sects, as we can see happening in Africa and in America.

A well fitting *Hadīth* to mention here, and which speaks for itself is taken from *Mishkāh al-Masābīh*. Chapter, *Fitnah*.

God's enemy (Dajjál) will dissolve like salt in water.

As far as their political and military mischief is concerned they cannot carry it much further than they are doing in the present day, and only Allāh knows what will happen when they do eventually exceed their limits. Let Muslims guard themselves against the evil which the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) warned us about so very many years ago. How wonderful it is that our Holy Prophet has explained to us the verses of the Qur'an so beautifully, and by his spiritual knowledge and vision foresaw that which was to take place at so distant a future.

And how wonderful it would be if more of us could take the Holy Prophet for an example and, in so doing, draw ourselves a little nearer to Alláh! And, when we ask for the mercy and blessings of Alláh, let us feel sure that we have deserved them.

وَمَا أَرْسَلْنَاكَ إِلَّا رَحْمَةً لِّلْعَالَمِينَ ﴿٥٠﴾

“And We have not sent thee (O Muhammad!) but as a mercy to all the nations.” (The Qur’án 21: 107.)

The following *Hadith* tells of what will happen to mankind at the time of *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj*. As Alláh revealed to the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) on the night of his Ascension into heaven.

Ibn ‘Abbás (peace be on him!) reported the Prophet as saying, “On the night when I was taken up to heaven, I saw Moses, a dark, tall, curly headed man, looking as though he were one of the men of Shanu’a. I saw Jesus, a man of medium height, reddish fair, with long hair. And I saw Malik, the guardian of hell, and the Dajjál. Now do not be in doubt about meeting him (Dajjál).” (Mishkáh al-Masábih, Chapter, Fitnah (Quoted by Bukhárí and Muslim in their Sahíhs).)

Speaking about the Ascension into heaven of the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) and the particular signs shown to him regarding the future of mankind at the time of *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj*. The Holy Qur’án says:

وَمَا جَعَلْنَا الرُّؤْيَا الَّتِي أَرَيْنَاكَ إِلَّا فِتْنَةً لِّلنَّاسِ

“And We made not the vision which We showed thee (O Muhammad!) but a trial for men.” (The Qur’án, 17: 60.)

And again the Holy Qur’án says:

لَقَدْ رَأَىٰ مِنْ آيَاتِ رَبِّهِ الْكُبْرَىٰ ﴿٥١﴾

“Certainly he saw of the greatest signs of his Lord.” (The Qur’án, 53:18.)

The above *Hadith* and Qur’anic verses make it clear that the prophecies regarding the future generations were given in a spiritual sense, and such prophecies can only be predicted in metaphorical language, therefore, the meaning of such prophecies can only be interpreted when the time comes for them to become manifest.

THE MEANING OF DÁBBAH AL-ARD

(Creature from the Earth)

A WARNING TO MUSLIMS

وَإِذَا وَقَعَ الْقَوْلُ عَلَيْهِمْ أَخْرَجْنَا لَهُمْ دَابَّةً مِّنَ الْأَرْضِ تُكَلِّمُهُمْ أَنَّ النَّاسَ كَانُوا بِآيَاتِنَا لَا يُوقِنُونَ

"And when the word comes to pass against them, We shall bring forth for them a creature from the earth (Dábbah al-Ard) that will speak to them, because people did not believe in Our messages." (The Qur'an, 27: 82.)

By the "creature from the earth who will speak to them", are evidently meant people who are bent low upon the earth. These people are the materialistic nations of the West, who have lost all sense of the higher values of life.

According to the books of *Hadith*, the coming forth of the *Dábbah al-Ard* is one of the signs of the approach of the hour. But the hour may mean either the Day of Judgement or the doom of a people. And this verse gives us an indication that the hour in this case stands for the doom of a nation; because it is spoken of as being a punishment for not believing in the Divine messages.

During our age, the rejectors of the Divine messages are the Muslims of today, who recite the Holy Qur'an parrot fashion, making little attempt to understand or act upon its teachings and hardly believing in it, instead of fulfilling their duty as Alláh commanded them and being His true and faithful servants. And, alas, this is not all, for we find that they are continuously at each other's throats, arguing and bickering, causing needless enmity and hatred instead of uniting as Muslims and being at peace with each other.

If all the Muslim nations would unite and organize themselves within the common bond and unity of Islam, their faith and strength would be such that they would have the power and voice to control not only their own lands, but also, to a large degree, the future of the coming generations of the world.

Much of the tension and disunity among the Islamic peoples today is caused by the so-called learned and religious leaders who hold so much sway over the ignorant and less educated masses, with their teachings and preachings of silly superstitions and misrepresentation of the teachings of the Holy Qur'an. Anything which they might have to say with regard to Islam is full of fantasy and superstition. No amount of superstition can guide man for he must have the guidance of a real understanding and true submissive faith in his heart, and, sad to say, this is the one thing lacking in the character of present-day Muslim masses.

If the reader will first study the Holy Qur'an, then the writings of the earlier and present day Muslim authors, he will find that some of these writers contradict the pure and simple teachings of the Holy Qur'an. I would then ask the reader to contemplate what I have said here, and I am sure that he will then realize and understand the meaning of the Qur'anic verse when it says: "We shall bring forth a creature from the earth, that will speak to them."

As explained above, this creature is the materialistic nations of the West, who move across the world like some great beasts, and whose main function is simply to live on this earth and satisfy their sensual desires like "beasts of the earth". They think of nothing more, and give no thought to the higher values of life or to life beyond the grave.

By "The beast of the earth speaking to them", i.e. speaking to the Muslim nations, we can see how the European nations dominated the Muslims for 200 years or more, and even today, when these Muslim nations have their so-called independence, they are to a great extent still dominated by the Europeans, so much so that they are not really free to make a move without either the consent or agreement of their previous "masters" who hold a great deal of control over the livelihood of Muslim nations, and this is what is meant when the Holy Qur'an says: "A creature from the earth (Dábbah al-Ard) will speak to them." i.e. tell them what to do and what not to do.

The interpretation of earlier Muslim commentators regarding Dábbah al-Ard (Creature from the Earth).

1. After *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj* are gone, the whole world will praise Alláh and believe in Islam.

2. Long afterwards, Islam will begin to decline again, and will do so to such an extent that it will be lower than at the time of *Dajjál*; for only a very limited few will pay heed to Alláh and to their religion, and the majority will act like savages.

3. Suddenly, Alláh will send smoke that will darken the whole world, and the night will be the length of three to four nights.

4. Then Alláh will make the sun rise from the west, instead of from the east, and the sun will complete only one-third of its course before it will set again. Then, the next day, the sun and the night will take their normal course.

5. After this, Alláh will close the door of mercy and no repentance whatsoever will be accepted.

6. The earth will shake and tremble such as in an earthquake, a result of which, Mount Safa, near Mecca, will crack and *Dábbah al-Ard* will come out of this crack.

7. The description of *Dábbah al-Ard* is that his face will be like that of a human being, his body like that of a horse, his legs like those of a camel, the hind quarters of a deer and the tail of a cow. He will have horns on his head and his two hands will be like those of a monkey. His stature will be sixty cubit feet. In his one hand he will hold the staff of the Prophet Moses and on the other hand will be the ring of the Prophet Solomon.

He will walk so fast that he will go around the world in a very short time, speaking to the people, and those he finds to be believers he will mark with the staff on their foreheads, and the believers' faces will shine bright as the moon.

But those he finds to be unbelievers, he will stamp them with the ring and their faces will become black and horrible. By doing this, the believers and the unbelievers will be clearly distinguishable. Then *Dábbah al-Ard* will disappear as suddenly as he appeared. Then Alláh will bring forth the Day of Judgement. (Reference to this can be found in T. P. Hughes, *A Dictionary of Islam*, page 539, London 1935.)

I have already given the translation and commentary of the verse of the Holy Qur'an concerning *Dábbah al-Ard*, and it is now left to the

reader to see which is more acceptable. But I would like to point out that the mention of the sun rising from the west should not be taken in the literal sense. The Holy Qur'an makes it abundantly clear on several occasions that the sun and moon, day and night, each run to an appointed time and cannot change their course.

لَا الشَّمْسُ يَنْبَغِي لَهَا أَنْ تُدْرِكَ الْقَمَرَ وَلَا اللَّيْلُ سَابِقُ
النَّهَارِ ۚ وَكُلٌّ فِي فَلَكٍ يَسْبَحُونَ ﴿٤٠﴾

Neither is it for the sun to overtake the moon, nor can the night outstrip the day; and all float on in an orbit. (The Qur'an, 36: 40.)

وَسَخَّرَ الشَّمْسَ وَالْقَمَرَ ۖ كُلٌّ يَجْرِي لِأَجَلٍ مُّسَمًّى يُدَبِّرُ
الْأَمْرَ يُفَصِّلُ الْآيَاتِ لَعَلَّكُمْ بَلَقَاءَ رَبِّكُمْ تُوقِنُونَ ﴿٢﴾

And He made the sun and the moon subservient (to you). Each one runs to an appointed term. He regulates the affair, making clear the messages, that you may be certain of the meeting with your Lord. (The Qur'an, 13: 2.)

Thus the mention in reports of the sun rising in the West is only a metaphorical expression. The sun mentioned here could mean light, and this light can be the light of Islam. Perhaps it means that in the future many of the European nations will accept Islam when they finally see the light, when their hatred for, and destruction of each other has ceased and they change their proud nature into humility.

My fellow Muslim brothers! Make no mistake, the prophecies concerning *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj* have been made manifest in our present day.

In order to follow the path of a true Muslim, we must guard against the evil vices and mischief of *Dajjál*, so that we may die with a pure 'Imán (faith) a clean Muslim heart and body; and, if we want our children to grow up as good Muslims in a true Islamic civilization and culture, we must not sit back waiting for prophecies to be fulfilled, but we must wake

up and take notice of what is happening around us. The Holy Qur'án does not forbid material progress, but Muslims are warned not to put their material values before their spiritual values as has been done by the European nations.

APPENDIX

Christianity was in fact spread by the Roman Emperor Constantine the Great some 325 years after the death of Jesus. He went forth with the cross in one hand and a sword in the other to convert people to Christianity. Vast numbers of innocent souls were destroyed because they did not accept his form of Christianity and his introduction of the Trinity.

Christian writers would do well to remember that it was in fact Christianity which was spread by the sword, and not Islam, as they would have people believe. As to their techniques of spreading the religion the reader is referred to *God, Alláh and Juju* by Jack Mendelsohn (Thomas Nelson & Sons, New York). Mark the following words:

“When the Englishman wants a new market for his adulterated Manchester goods he sends a missionary to teach the natives the Gospel of Peace. The natives kill the missionary, he flies to arms in defence of Christianity, fights for it, and takes the market as a reward from heaven.”

The Christian missionary movement is regarded by many as an attempt to turn Africans into European Christians. “Missions remain strangely tolerant of racial discrimination” and look down upon local culture wherever the white man has the upper hand. The oft-quoted example of the relationship between the Bible-carrying missionaries and empire builders is related:

“The missionaries came to us and said, ‘We want to teach you to pray.’ ‘Good,’ we said, ‘we would like to learn to pray.’ So the missionaries told us to close our eyes. We closed our eyes and learned to pray. When we opened our eyes, there was the Bible in our hands, but our land was gone!”

CHAPTER 7

Interpretation of the words *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj* by earlier Muslim Commentators of the books of *Hadíth*

At this stage it would be advantageous to know the signs of *Dajjál* as mentioned by some of the Muslim commentators of *Hadíth*.

Present-day Muslims in general have strange notions about *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj*. I give below some views popularly held by the Muslims. I have taken them, with their explanations and translations from books in different languages, and from books by earlier Muslim writers and commentators of *Hadíth*—from the *Tafsír al-Haqqani* and *Mishkáh al-Masábih* in particular. The readers will also find references to this in *The Shorters' Encyclopaedia of Islam*. There are, of course, many more of them. It was indeed extremely difficult to interpret the prophecies about *Dajjál* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj* in the Holy Qur'án and *Hadíth* when there was nothing comparable in that age with things mentioned about them. Prophecies are always couched in metaphorical language. And because they talk of the distant future events, their true significance can only be understood at the time of their fulfilment when they turn into standing miracles.

The earlier commentators of the Holy Qur'án and *Hadíth* give us the impression that *Yájúj* and *Májúj* (Gog and Magog) are a different kind of human being from what we are ourselves. Some commentators maintain that they are descended direct from Adam, while others maintain that they are descended from Japheth, the son of the Prophet Noah. But according to the Holy Qur'án and *Hadíth*, also the Bible and geographical history, *Yájúj* and *Májúj* are in no way different from any normal human beings.

To me old interpretations are not satisfactory, because they were done at a time when the world had not the slightest idea of the shape of things to come. It is with this view that I critically look upon the popular view held by Muslim masses about these prophecies. At the same time, it is with diffidence that I have ventured to offer my personal interpretations of them. It is just possible that, as the time goes on, the future generations might find better answers for these complex prophecies.

The basic difference, as the reader will notice, in the old and the new interpretations is that the earlier commentators understood the language of such prophecies in their literal sense while the modern understanding is in their allegorical sense: Let us discuss some of the popular notions. To begin with, the interpretation of *Dajjál* is that:

1. *Dajjál is said to be living on an island somewhere on this earth and his physical body is so great that the sea will be ankle-deep for him.*

In saying that *Dajjál* is on an island somewhere on this earth, it is a mistake to believe that a person of his strength and stature could not be found when man has explored and discovered the entire earth and even beyond, e.g., the present day landings on the moon. This simply means that *Dajjál* did not have the power to come into the open until such a time came when he was strong enough to do so. And, as for *Dajjál* standing ankle-deep in the ocean, I have explained this elsewhere.

2. *His hands and legs are in shackles and will remain so until the time comes for his release.*

The interpretation that the hands and feet of *Dajjál* will be tied shows that *Dajjál* existed before our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!), but he had no power to dominate the world.

As I have already explained, *Dajjál* is identified as being the European nations; but, if anyone wonders why it took them so long to reveal themselves, they have only to study the very early history of the European nations and they will find that Christianity was not a very dominating religion in those countries at that time; for they worshipped many Eastern demi-gods and son-gods which were introduced by the pagan Romans because at that time Europe was dominated by the Roman Empire. The last of the Eastern son-gods to be introduced by the Romans before the advent of Jesus was Mithra, who was Persian-born and said to be of virgin birth. He also died to cleanse the sins of the entire world and was resurrected. Furthermore, his birthday was on 25th December.

Then came Jesus from the East to take over from Mithra; for this religion of Jesus was introduced into Europe by the pagan Romans, and he is now the last of the son-gods left in the Western world. Then Christianity and their other religions struggled for a very long time until Christianity became a partly dominating figure in Europe, when it became popular at the time of King James I of England, in 1611. He destroyed all the Bibles written by self-styled clergymen and ordered a revision to

be made in order to bring into being an authorized English version, and this is the version which is used today.

After this, they began to organize their missionary work abroad, and this was followed by other Eastern and Western European countries. This is what was meant in the interpretation that *Dajjál* had his hands and feet tied.

I have explained in later pages about the beginning of their domination.

3. *Some commentators think that he will be of Jewish descent.*

Concerning this third interpretation that *Dajjál* will be of Jewish descent, I have already explained that *Dajjál* is not any single person but a group of persons. This also means that *Dajjál* will take the Jewish religion and will carry out his tasks in the name of the Jewish faith. I would again remind Muslim readers that the Prophet Jesus was a Jew and the prophet of the Jewish people, according to the Holy Qur'án and the Bible.

4. *When Islam declines to such an extent that people pay no heed to the Holy Qur'án and Hadith and every Arab House will be in dispute with its neighbour, Alláh will send Dajjál in order that He (Alláh) may test the people and find out which of them are believers and which of them are unbelievers.*

This interpretation mentions that Islam will decline and *Dajjál* will come into prominence, and if we study the history of Islam and the Holy Qur'án from the time of our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) we find that Islam began to lose its purity and true teachings a thousand years ago, as the Prophet himself predicted in the following *Hadith*.

"The best of the generations is my generation, then those who follow them, then those who follow them, then after them will come a people who will praise themselves in abundance of wealth and love and plumpness." (Tirmidhi, *Shamá'il*, 31:39.)

According to another *Hadith*:

"There will come a people in which there is no good." (Kanz al-'Ummál, Vol. 6, p. 2068.)

Yet another *Hadith* tells us:

"A crooked way — they are not of me nor I of them." (Kanz al-'Ummál, Vol. 6, p. 2073.)

The real warning, however, comes from Alláh in the Holy Qur'an when he tells Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) that the time would come when his soul would cry to Alláh that his followers had forgotten the Qur'an, and indeed Islam as a whole.

وَقَالَ الرَّسُولُ يُرَبِّ إِنَّا قَوْمٌ
أَتَّخَذُوا هَذَا الْقُرْآنَ
مَهْجُورًا

"And the Messenger will say: My Lord, surely my people treat this Qur'an as a forsaken thing." (The Qur'an, 25:30.)

Islam reached its lowest ebb in the 17th-18th centuries when it came into contact with the European Christian Nations. By mixing the Qur'anic truth with their falsehoods and by introducing all their nonsensical beliefs and silly superstitions in their religion, they gave the European nations the opportunity of gaining the upper hand over Muslim nations. With regard to the Arabs, we can witness today their disputes with their neighbours. Instead of standing united at this crucial time they are at each others' throats and in so doing they are becoming the victims of trial and tribulation.

The result of this has been that the Europeans have dominated the entire Muslim world, and have converted millions of Muslims to Christianity, and thousands of mosques into churches.

Even at this present time, thousands of Muslims are being converted to Christianity.

5. He (Dajjál) will come from the East.

This means that although the homeland of *Dajjál* is in the West (Europe), his manifestations, or rather the manifestation of his mischief will be in the East.

This shows that the predominance of *Dajjál* will harm the people of the East. And it is a patent fact that the mischiefs of *Dajjál* do not at all affect the people of his own country, who really get the benefit of his pillaging the East. The *Dajjál's* appearance in the East thus signifies

the manifestation of his mischief in the eastern countries, whose people he will try to enslave, physically as well as morally, temporally as well as spiritually.

As for his existence, as I have already explained, it is evident from what the *Hadiths* say that he existed even at the time of the Holy Prophet, but that at that time his hands and feet were shackled. This is exactly what we find in the case of European nations. Up to a certain time they were confined to their own native lands, and then they sallied forth to subjugate the rest of the world, so that they are now in actual possession of all other countries or wield such an influence over them that their movements are guided and controlled by Europe.

6. Alláh will give Dajjál all the power he needs and he will be free to exercise his powers in whatever way he likes, even to raising a man from the dead.

This interpretation says that Alláh will give *Dajjál* His power.

I have explained in previous pages that, according to the Holy Qur'an, Alláh does not give anyone His power over nature. What Alláh does give to mankind is the natural power of material knowledge, and this we can see has been well developed in the European nations.

7. When Dajjál comes, he will be riding on an ass which will travel vast distances in a very short time, and on the forehead of Dajjál will be written Káfir, which means infidel, and every believing Muslim will read and understand this word, whether he be literate or illiterate.

Also the right eye of Dajjál will be blind and the left eye will shine like a bright star. Furthermore, his complexion will be white.

Concerning the ass which *Dajjál* will ride, also the writing on his forehead, the blindness of the right eye, and the brightness of the left eye, all these have been well explained by me in the previous chapter.

8. Alláh will give Dajjál so much power that he will be able to carry Heaven and Hell upon his shoulders.

The carrying of Heaven and Hell with him (*Dajjál*) has also been explained earlier, and it means that, whoever accepts his faith and culture, *Dajjál* will feed and care for him, but whoever rejects him will be left to perish.

9. *With Dajjál will be beautiful women like fairies and Jinn and many illegitimate children with various other kinds of people, including an army of Jews.*

The beautiful women, illegitimate children, army of Jews and other various kinds of people who will follow *Dajjál*. I have, in earlier pages, explained and made this clear.

10. *He will have music and singing, the like of which has never been heard before, and whoever hears his music, whether young or old, will follow it, as the bees follow their queen.*

This interpretation refers to the music and singing of *Dajjál*. The effect of this on both young and old can be seen today with the screaming fanatical mobs of all ages, fighting and crying to see or touch these singing and dancing idols, and, in so far as their dancing is concerned, the wild natives of the jungle show more modesty and decency in their dances than do the so-called civilized races of today in Europe and in America.

11. *Dajjál will travel the entire world and will request the earth to surrender its treasures, which it will willingly do.*

This refers to the treasures of the earth, which I have already explained.

12. *He will claim himself to be Alláh and, whoever has a weak faith and accepts him, Dajjál will put him into his heaven; but whoever has a strong faith in Alláh and rejects Dajjál will be put into his hell fire. However, those who go into his heaven will find that Alláh has turned it into hell, and those who go into his hell fire will find that Alláh has turned it into heaven. But those who do go into the hell of Dajjál must read the first ten and the last ten verses of the chapter al-Kahf (The Cave) in the Holy Qur'án, and they will be saved from hell.*

Dajjál will claim to be God and whoever wants to be saved from the hell of *Dajjál* must read the first ten and the last ten verses of the chapter *al-Kahf* (The Cave) in the Holy Qur'án. The meaning of this has also been explained earlier in this book. This chapter talks of the European Christian nations.

13. *His voice will be so loud that the whole world will hear him when he speaks.*

His voice will be heard all over the world. This is not the physical voice of *Dajjál* but the voice of radio and television, and now recently through Telstar, which can be heard directly from one end of the world to the other.

14. *All these things Dajjál will do and dominate the entire world in 40 days, from the largest country to the smallest island; and his first day will be the length of one year, but the days will gradually decline into a normal day.*

By saying that *Dajjál* will dominate the world in forty days, I would point out that the figure 40 is a figure of speech in Islamic literature. The meaning is that *Dajjál* will dominate the world in a very short period and, if we look into the geographical history of earlier imperial nations, we find that they always continued their domination for a thousand years or more, but not so the European nations and their empires. They only began their domination in the 17th century and by the 18th century they had dominated the entire earth. However, since the second world war, they have lost their entire empire except for a few places where they are permanently established, such as in America, Canada, Australia, New Zealand and perhaps South Africa, and this is what is meant by saying that *Dajjál* will dominate the world in 40 days.

But, if anyone studies this *Hadíth* carefully one will find that the 40 days are in fact 40 years, and the *Hadíth* clearly states that the first day will be the length of one year; this means, therefore, that *Dajjál* will bring the entire world under his mercy in the space of 40 years. We may safely say that *Dajjál's* real mastery of the world began in 1945-1948 with the dropping of the atomic bomb, and the creation of the state of Israel in Muslim land. I mention the state of Israel here because this prophecy has important connections with the Jews of the present day, and I have given its full implication at the beginning of chapter four.

The European nations (*Dajjál*) hold such power today that they are pleased to feel the world is safe in their hands, but should their power be challenged, their displeasure and dissatisfaction could reach such a peak that they would lose control and destroy themselves and the entire world.

Their claim that they are the only people capable or sensible enough to hold such power is somewhat weakened when we recall that they themselves started two world wars.

Regarding this *Hadith* we should be careful not to take it too literally, otherwise we shall find that we are contradicting the Qur'an. The Holy Qur'an states quite clearly that Day and Night can never be altered. I have quoted two of these verses in the last chapter. This *Hadith* is most important as regards *Dajjál's* domination of the world. Many books of *Hadith* refer to the prophecy, giving *Dajjál* the limited time of 40 days, in other words 40 years. Reference to this can be found in *The Shorters' Encyclopaedia of Islam*, page 67.

The mistake made by earlier commentators of the *Hadith* is that they interpreted every detail in terms of the supernatural, and in so doing were unable to arrive at a clear understanding of its message and meaning. It is naturally impossible for a nation to dominate the world in 40 days and so we can reckon their complete mastery of the world from 1945 to 1985 when this 40 year period began.

I would ask readers to study carefully *Hadith* No. 16 (see *infra*) with regard to the Prophet Jesus coming back to the earth and ruling the world for 40 years. And I would also refer the reader to the following *Hadith*, which, like number 16 is taken from *Mishkâh al-Masâbîh*, Chapter *Fitnah*, where it is clearly mentioned that *Dajjál* will also dominate the world for 40 years, the latter part of the verse is allegorical.

Asmâ', daughter of Yazîd, son of al-Sakan reported the Prophet as saying: "Dajjál will remain on the earth for 40 years, a year being like a month, a month being like a week, a week being like a day, and a day like it takes to burn a palm branch."

We must also remember that according to the Holy Qur'an the name *Masîh* applies to the Prophet Jesus, and according to *Hadith* it also applies to *Dajjál*.

To my mind, where the earlier commentators made their mistake is in their interpretation that Jesus the *Masîh* would return to earth and kill *Dajjál*, instead of interpreting that *Dajjál* would use the holy title of *Masîh* to carry out his dirty work. This misunderstanding is due to their lack of foresight as to what would happen in the future, and not being able to visualise in what form this prophecy would become manifest. I believe it is through this misunderstanding that the meaning of this prophecy has remained hidden from the eyes of Muslims for many generations.

It would be fairly safe to say that their power and technology will prove to be their destruction, if not the destruction of the entire world.

A reference to this was made by Dr. Jacques Piccard, a well-known oceanographer, who told a symposium on "Man in the 21st Century" in Hoboken, New Jersey, that he seriously doubted whether man would still exist in that century. He feared that man would not survive technological progress and nuclear destruction.

He said, "This technology we 'enjoy' today is little else but a widespread suicidal pollution, it is a blight affecting not only the air we breathe and the water we drink, but also the land we till and the outer space we hardly know.

"But, most tragic of all, we now have the pollution of man in his body by insidious chemical products." He added that it was difficult to imagine that man could "play" with nuclear bombs forever without starting a war.

This was reported in the *Daily Telegraph*, London, for 16th November 1967.

I would advise my readers, that if they seek further information regarding the prophecies of the present day, and their interpretations in my book, they would do well to read the book, *Unless Peace Comes*, edited by Nigel Calder, London 1968. The book was reviewed by almost all the English national newspapers. Its contents are strange, almost to the point of fiction, though they are all hard facts, terrifying but true. It is a combination of reports by eminent scientists of Nuclear and Conventional Weapons, Undersea Warfare, Air Missiles and Spacecraft, Microbiological Weapons, Chemical Warfare, Geophysical Warfare and Psychological Warfare. It also contains important facts about the miscalculation of Anti-Ballistic Missile Systems and Chinese Nuclear and Missile Power.

During the next 15 years, more sophisticated conventional and nuclear weapons will be created, and the purpose of eminent scientists in compiling this book is to show the leaders of the world that unless they reach a compromise and bring about some kind of peace, it is inevitable that a third world war will break out before the end of this century.

15. *The holy cities of Mecca and Medina will be the only two places not dominated by Dajjál, and even these he will attempt to dominate; but, when he goes to these two cities, he will find angels guarding them with swords in their hands.*

The fact that *Dajjál* cannot enter into Mecca and Medina, as angels will guard against it, is mentioned here, and if we look into the history

of these two Holy Cities we find that Alláh has indeed saved His holy house, the Ka'bah, many times from the hands of His enemies. No one can say that they have actually seen angels guarding it, and the Holy Qur'án tells us again and again that man cannot see angels with his physical eye. Therefore the angels mentioned here stand for the mercy and blessing from Alláh to mankind.

Those of us who know something of the life story of the late King Ibn Sa'úd of Saudi Arabia do, I am sure, agree that he received this mercy and blessing from Alláh in order to save Mecca from the hands of *Dajjál*. In 1926, King Sa'úd took over Mecca and the whole of Hijáz from Sharíf Husayn of Mecca, and it was at this time that the British were planning to make a naval base at the Red Sea port of Rabigh, north of Jeddah, and it was also their intention to run a Trans-Jordan and Syria railway line through Arabia into their own colonial territories and ultimately dominate the whole of Arabia, including Mecca and Medina.

I would like to point out that Sharíf Husayn, who was pro-British, was not aware that he was being double-crossed by them. He was given the promise that if he helped the British to achieve victory over the Turks, the British would see that he would be made ruler over the whole of Arabia. But alas, what treachery after he had helped to defeat the Turks. We can see the proof of this if we bear in mind what has happened to his family, the Hashemite family of Jordan, and the persecution which they endure today at the hands of the Jews.

If the British had succeeded in carrying out their plans, the Ka'bah would have lost its atmosphere of holiness and purity, for it was their intention to destroy Islam, and what better place to begin than the actual heart and the pilgrimage place of the Muslims.

Their destructive thinking was well versed in the history of the Crusades when the British General Allenby entered Jerusalem in 1917 and declared, "Now the crusades are over". Many people, Muslims in particular, are not aware that the soldiers who fought with General Allenby were Muslims from the Punjab who fought against Arab and Turkish Muslims, unaware that they were fighting for the cause of *Dajjál*. In this same year the British government promised the Jews their own homeland and this was indeed the beginning of sad days for the Arabs, this Jewish homeland was to be Palestine, and the result of this is that today we see the Jews in control of the beautiful and sacred *al-Masjid al-Aqsá*, and no Muslim can find peace of mind whilst this situation con-

tinues. Later, in 1920, when General Gouraud, of France, entered Damascus, in Syria, he remarked at the tomb of Saladin, "Rise ye and behold, O Saladin, here comes the Grandson of the Crusaders."

Even today, we can see the desire of the European Christian nations and the Zionists, together with the American C.I.A. and Russian K.G.B. organizations, to disrupt and destroy Islam which is their common enemy. If we read their books and newspapers, and listen to their radio propaganda, whether in the east or the west, we see how they are active in setting one Muslim state against another, particularly in the Middle East. However, in 1929 King Ibn Sa'úd himself led a very small army of Arabs and fought his opponents, who were rebel Arabs bribed and supported with arms and ammunition by the British. The mercy and blessings of Alláh were surely in evidence at this crucial time, for even with such a small army, the King was victorious and the House of Alláh and the sacred cities of Mecca and Medina were saved from the hands of *Dajjál*. This is perhaps the greatest miracle ever witnessed by the present-day Muslim world, and this is what is meant in saying that the angels will guard these two holy cities, and by the Grace of Alláh they will forever remain sacred and pure.

Alláh forbid that these people should ever gain dominance over the Holy Cities of Mecca and Medina and turn them into dens of vice as would be their aim. We Muslims must guard against this ever happening, for if they can ever find a loophole they will attempt to occupy these two cities in the name of their civilization and their national interests, through their Zionist agents. I would even go so far as to say that they are already on the doorstep of the Ka'bah in the present day, for many Muslims, and indeed, non-Muslims are unaware that the Jews have a well-planned map of the territories which they ultimately intend to control in order to build and extend their Zionist empire. This map shows their intended future boundaries running from the Euphrates, Iraq to the upper Nile in Egypt, across to Khaybar and Medina in Saudi Arabia, and to Syria, Lebanon and Jordan. Let no Muslim be complacent in thinking that this can never happen, for if they stop to think and look at the present day happenings, they will see that it has already begun to happen in the way in which the Israelis have extended their boundaries in Jordan, the Syrian Heights, Gaza Strip and Egyptian Sinai in the six days of the Arab-Israeli war of June 1967.

I have explained their interests more fully elsewhere in the book.

16. Then Allāh will send Jesus from Heaven and he will be brought by two angels to the roof of the Ka'bah. When the people see Jesus on the top of the Ka'bah they will bring ladders to help him down. After which Jesus with other Muslims will declare war on Dajjāl and ultimately slay him and break the cross. Jesus will convert the whole world to Islam and rule by the principles of Qur'ānic law for 40 years. Then he will pass away and will be buried next to the grave of the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!).

Jesus' coming back to the earth will be explained later. It has been mentioned that the Muslims will fight against Dajjāl. It is true that, as yet, we have not been able to fight the material power of Dajjāl, nor have we been able to stop the cultural influences of the west, yet the signs are that the Muslims are becoming more and more aware of this danger and the day is not far distant when the sensible element of the western society will see the error of their ways and the evils of their culture as it is today. Then we shall witness that the Muslims have achieved victory over Dajjāl, as mentioned in the following *Hadīth*:

"The Prophet (peace and blessings of Allāh be upon him!) said: You will fight against them (the Arabs) and Allāh will give you victory over them, then you will fight against Persia, and Allāh will give you victory over them; then you will fight against Rome, and Allāh will give you victory over them; then you will fight Dajjāl, and Allāh will give you victory over them." (*Mishkāt al-Masābīh*, Chapter *Fitnah*. Quoted from *The Sahīh of Muslim*.)

In this connection the reader may also consult Leopold Weiss Muhammad Asad's book, *Road to Mecca*, London, 1954. The tenth chapter is on Dajjāl. In the author's opinion, Dajjāl is "one-eyed" because he looks upon only one side of life — material progress — and is unaware of his spiritual side. Western man has truly given himself to the worship of the Dajjāl. To the weak the material advancement is so glittering that they have come to believe that it is a godhead in its own right (pp. 292-295).

I will now give the reader the interpretation of Yájúj and Májúj (Gog and Magog) with my own commentary.

1. Yájúj and Májúj are still behind a barrier somewhere on this earth, continuously trying to break down the barrier or wall, in order to be free. But Allāh does not allow them to break it, until the time comes when He is ready for them to do so. The first sign of the breaking of the barrier will be the fire which will rise in Shām (Syria).

Regarding the first interpretation, it is a mistake to believe that when man has travelled and discovered the entire world he has not been able to find where the barrier was hidden, and therefore, no barrier was built by Dhū al-Qarnayn. All the evidence available shows that he did build a barrier as a fortification.

The mention that Yájúj and Májúj (Gog and Magog) are still behind the barrier could mean that their movement was limited to their native land until they were ready to be set free. With regard to the fire which will rise in Shām (Syria), we are aware of the trouble and unrest which has become so much a part of the Middle East during the past 20 years since the founding of the State of Israel by Yájúj and Májúj (Gog and Magog).

2. Their population will be vast in numbers.

The mention of their vast numbers is not surprising. If we look around the world today, we can see how vast is the number of these European peoples, plus the millions of non-European peoples who are following in the footsteps of their culture.

3. Their death rate is much lower than that of the rest of the world.

Here we have a mention of their death rate and, according to a United Nations census, the death rate of European nations is very much lower than that of the other countries of the world. The life-span of Europeans is on an average 55 to 60 years, while that of the rest of the world is on an average 30 to 35 years.

4. Their physical body is so strong that their two ears are like those of an elephant, one of which they sleep on, while the other ear covers their whole body.

As regards their huge ears and bodies this concerns their power. The earlier commentators did not visualize the extent of their material power and so interpreted it as physical power.

5. Before the time comes for their release from behind the barrier, Allāh will send Jesus from Heaven to slay Dajjāl (Antichrist) and Jesus will still be on this earth when the time comes for Yájúj and Májúj to be set free. Then Allāh will tell Jesus to take the believing servants of Allāh with him and shelter with them in the mountains. Allāh will then break the barrier and let Yájúj and Májúj free, and they will surge forth and devour every-

thing upon the earth. All vegetation, animals, the waters of the whole world and even human beings will be devoured by them, and not a single drop of water will be left in the Gulf of Tiberius.

This refers to their release and ultimate power over the entire world, and it also means that they will dominate the world in a very short time. If anyone goes through the geographical history of the world, he will find that in ancient times one nation would dominate another, but no one will find another nation which has dominated the entire world as the European nations have done and are still doing in the present day. Their domination began in the middle of the 17th century and was completed by the end of the 18th century. No matter if it were a large country or a small island their domination covered it.

What is meant is that they will eat everything on earth and drink every drop of water, including that of the Sea of Tiberias, which is in Palestine, and now in the hands of the Jews, or, in other words, they will monopolize all the resources of the world.

6. *Their voice will be so loud that the whole world will shake and tremble at the power of it.*

The mention here that the world will shake and tremble at the loudness and power of their voice means their military and political power. The nuclear explosions do shake the world these days and the radio-active fall-out from these affect every part of the globe.

7. *After they have devoured everything they will still not be satisfied, and then they will rush through the sky and begin to shoot arrows into the heavens in order to try and kill Alláh. And Alláh in turn will fulfil their wish and command the angels to put blood on the arrows and return them to earth.*

Concerning the shooting of arrows into the sky, this means the powerful rockets which are used today, and the killing of Alláh implies that they will discard Alláh completely, and this can be witnessed in present-day Europe, especially in Russia where posters depict the common working man kicking Alláh out of Heaven. The Russian leaders and astronauts have often declared sarcastically that they could not find God anywhere in space. (See Appendix to this chapter.)

It can also be witnessed in the other countries which have come under the Western cultural influence, where people do not particularly want to hear or discuss God and religion.

8. *When they see the arrows return to earth covered in blood, they will believe that they have killed Alláh. Then they will say: "We have killed God, now let us try to dominate the moon and the sky."*

They will try to reach the moon and sky. As regards this we can see today they have already made landings on the moon, and how hard they are trying to dominate not only the moon but other planets also, but whether they succeed permanently is quite another matter.

9. *At that time Alláh will send down some kind of disease upon them which will eat all the flesh from their bodies.*

Some commentators, however, maintain that there will be two groups and they will destroy each other, till no one is left.

The disease spoken of here means their atomic warfare and its radio-activity, and we can also see that they are continuously fighting each other at the present time.

10. *The smell from their bodies when they die from this disease will spread all over the world.*

Regarding the smell from their bodies which is mentioned in this interpretation, many of us have sampled the smell and decay of dead bodies during the last two wars. But can we even begin to imagine the extent of death and disease and the stinking smell which would be caused by a nuclear war?

11. *Then it is that Jesus, with all other Muslims who have hidden in the mountains, will pray to Alláh to save them from the disease and death.*

Concerning those that are left, they will pray to Alláh to save them from disease and death, for they will realize that Alláh is the only invincible factor in human life and the One able to help and save them, and this also shows that there will only be a limited population left in the world after this destruction.

12. *Then a great cloud will cover the sky and Alláh will send down rain for 40 days. At first the rain will be red, the colour of blood. It will then turn green and will wash away the smell and the bodies. The rain will finally become clear and purify everything.*

This interpretation speaks of a great cloud and two kinds of rain. The first being red, then green in colour, no doubt means the radio-active

rain, and, if the European nations stockpile large numbers of nuclear weapons, and these weapons are ultimately used in war, the vast amount of radio-active fall-out produced by these weapons will result in the rains being coloured and poisoned. The third kind of rain mentioned will no doubt be the pure and natural rain which will purify and cleanse the earth. (See Appendix.)

The following newspaper report gives us something to think about regarding red rain.

"Red rain fell on Malaga, the Spanish holiday resort, today. Experts think it possible that it was caused by dust clouds from the Sahara sweeping over Spain and meeting a rainstorm. The rain left a film of reddish mud on the city. (*The Daily Telegraph*, London, for 29 March 1968.)

13. *The believing servants who were saved will restore the earth and will live peacefully and serve Alláh, for their faith will be Islam.*

Here are mentioned the small populations that have been in shelter. They will by now realize the uselessness of war and hatred, for, after so much suffering, they will become aware of the value of true belief in Alláh. As a result, there will be peace and understanding for all in the love of Alláh, and for this true and pure religion of Islam. The word Islam means Peace.

I have given briefly my own explanations of the above signs mentioned in the reports.

I have explained as best I could the interpretations of earlier Muslim writers. I have also given my humble views. I must leave it to the reader to draw his own conclusions.

APPENDIX

Cosmonauts May Defy God

Gherman Titov, the Russian cosmonaut, is reported to have proposed that some sort of anti-religious experiment should be carried out in space by Russian spacemen.

He is reported to have made the proposal in a speech to a conference on atheism held by the Communist Party several weeks ago.

"Studying the cosmos and penetrating further and further into the depths of the universe leaves no place for God on earth or in Heaven," he said.

Titov said the cosmonauts had decided to direct their activities more against religion. He did not elaborate his reference to a possible "special anti-religious experiment in the cosmos". (*Western Mail*, Cardiff, for 1st February 1964.)

H-Force "Equal to 10 Tons of T.N.T. For All"

President Johnson said today in a television broadcast that the United States and Russia between them have nuclear arsenals with explosive force equal to ten tons of T.N.T. for every man, woman and child on the face of the earth.

Ways should be found to stop "the ominous increase in strategic nuclear forces, whether planes or missiles, whether offensive or defensive". Mr. Johnson was explaining the disarmament proposals he had sent to Geneva. (*The Daily Telegraph*, London, for January 1964.)

If Only One Knew

The President (Kennedy) then recalled the remarks made by Prince Von Bulow, former German Chancellor, who said to Bethmann-Hollweg, then Chancellor, when war broke out in 1914: "How did it all happen?" and Bethmann-Hollweg replied: "Ah, if only one knew."

"My fellow Americans," the President declared, "if this planet is ever ravaged by nuclear war, if 300 million Americans, Russians and Europeans are wiped out by a 60-minute nuclear exchange—if the pitiable survivors of that devastation can then endure the ensuing fire, poison, chaos and catastrophe—I do not want one of those survivors to ask 'How did it happen?'—and to receive the incredible reply 'Ah, if only one knew'."

"Therefore while maintaining our readiness for war, let us exhaust every avenue of peace. Let us always make clear both our willingness to talk, if talk will help, and our readiness to fight if fight we must." — Part of a speech given by the late President Kennedy at an American university. (*The Sunday Telegraph*, London, for 20th October 1963.)

The Prophet Jesus

As all Muslims will agree, the life story of Jesus is a most controversial subject, particularly his death. But if any Muslim feels strongly that it affects his orthodox belief I ask him to ignore this chapter and concentrate on the other important chapters of the book. As an orthodox Muslim myself, I have no wish to enter into any arguments, for it is through our arguments and differences that we lower Islam in the eyes of non-Muslims and leave ourselves open to ridicule.

In the following chapter I have tried to give the views of Muslim scholars, without venturing to comment myself.

I believe that the most important thing for us today is to concentrate on the prophecies of the Holy Qur'án and the teachings of the Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) rather than to get too deeply involved in matters regarding the Prophet Jesus. But my reason for giving this chapter is that it plays a very important part in the prophecies concerning the present day, and the reader can see that without this chapter the book would be incomplete.

I give here two Qur'anic verses regarding this. I also give a commentary on these two verses by Muhammad Asad, whose translation of the Holy Qur'án into English has been published by the World Muslim League (*al-Rabitah al-Islamiyyah*) Mecca, 1964.

وَرَبِّكَ فَرِهِمْ وَقَوْلِهِمْ عَلَىٰ مَرْيَمَ
بُهْتَانًا عَظِيمًا ۖ وَقَوْلِهِمْ إِنَّا قَتَلْنَا الْمَسِيحَ
عِيسَى ابْنَ مَرْيَمَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ ۚ وَمَا قَتَلُوهُ وَمَا
صَلَبُوهُ وَلَكِنْ شُبِّهَ لَهُمْ ۚ وَإِنَّ الَّذِينَ اخْتَلَفُوا
فِيهِ لَفِي شَكٍّ مِّنْهُ ۚ وَمَا لَهُمْ بِهِ مِنْ عِلْمٍ إِلَّا
اتِّبَاعَ الظَّنِّ ۚ وَمَا قَتَلُوهُ يَقِينًا ۖ بَلْ رَفَعَهُ اللَّهُ
إِلَيْهِ ۚ وَكَانَ اللَّهُ عَزِيزًا حَكِيمًا ۝

"And for their refusal to acknowledge the truth, and the awesome calumny which they utter against Mary, and their boast: 'Behold we have slain the Christ Jesus, son of Mary (who claimed to be) God's apostle!'"

"However, they did not slay him, and neither did they crucify him, but it only seemed to them (as if it had been) so; and, verily those who hold conflicting views about this matter are indeed confused, having no (real) knowledge thereof, and following mere conjecture. For, of a certainty, they did not slay him: nay, God exalted him unto Himself — and God is indeed Almighty Wise." (The Qur'án, 4: 156-158.)

Thus, the Qur'án categorically denies the story of the crucifixion of Jesus. There is a common belief among the Muslims that at the last moment God substituted for Jesus a person closely resembling him (according to some accounts, that person was Judas), who was subsequently crucified in his place. This view is supported by numerous arguments which cannot be explained without going into lengthy details for which there is no scope in this book. Similarly there are those who believe that this view does not find support in the Holy Qur'án or in the authentic traditions.

According to them this view represents no more than confused attempts at "harmonizing" the Qur'anic statement that Jesus was not crucified with the graphic description, in the Gospels, of his crucifixion. The story of the crucifixion as such has been succinctly explained in the Qur'anic phrase *wa lákin shubbiha lahum*, which they render as "but it only appeared to them as if it had been so" — a legend that somehow had grown up (possibly under the then-powerful influence of Mithraistic beliefs) to the effect that he had died on the cross in order to atone for the "original sin" with which mankind is allegedly burdened. This legend became so firmly established among the latter-day followers of Jesus that even his enemies, the Jews, began to believe it — albeit in a derogatory sense (for crucifixion was, in those times, a heinous form of death penalty reserved for the lowest of criminals). Those who believe that Jesus was not crucified lay their belief on the explanation of the phrase *wa lákin shubbiha lahum*, the more so as the expression *shubbiha li* is idiomatically synonymous with *khuyyila li*, i.e. (a thing) "became a fancied image to me", i.e., "in my mind", in other words, "it seemed to me" (see *Qámús*, art. *khayala*, as well as Lane, *Lexican* II, 833, and IV, 1500).

Cf. 3: 54, where God says to Jesus:

إِذْ قَالَ اللَّهُ يَعْزِبْنِي إِلَيْهِ مُتَوَفِّيكَ وَرَافِعُكَ إِلَيْهِ

"Verily, I shall cause thee to die, and shall exalt thee unto Me."

Literally, the verb *rafa'ahú* means "he raised him" or "elevated him". According to some commentators, when the act of *raf'* of a human being is attributed to God, it means "raising" or "elevating" him in the sense of honouring or exalting him. Nowhere in the Qur'an is there any warrant for the popular belief of many Muslims that God has "taken up" Jesus bodily into heaven. Muhammad Asad has also translated *rafa'ahú* as "exalted him". This translation, however, was not acceptable to the World Muslim League and, because of this and some other controversial points, they have proscribed Asad's translation. The expression "God exalted him unto Himself" in the above verse denoted the elevation of Jesus to the realm of God's special grace—a blessing in which all prophets partake, as is evident from 19:57, where the verb *rafa'náhu* ("We exalted him") is used with regard to the Prophet Idris. (See also Muhammad 'Abduh in the Manar III, 316 f. and VI, 20 f.) The "nay" (*bal*), according to these commentators, at the beginning of the sentence is meant to stress the contrast between the belief of the Jews that they had put Jesus to a shameful death on the cross, and the stress on God's having "exalted him unto Himself".

In view of the popular belief to the contrary, one gets a surprise in the pronouncements from the Azhar University, Cairo, which support Asad's interpretation. In a letter (dated 9th September, 1960) to my wife in answer to her question about the death of Jesus Christ, the following reply was received from Muhammad Taufik Ahmad, member of the High Islamic Council of *Dár Tabligh al-Islám*, P.O. Box 112, Cairo, Egypt:

"He (Jesus) was a human being, and died as everybody dies, but when and where, no one knows that. He finished his message and would never come again."

He also pointed out that the Islamic teachings were complete and that there was no need for Jesus or any other prophet to return, and that as long as we had the Qur'an there was no need for any other reminder.

The late Shaykh Mahmúd Shaltút (d. 1964 C.E.), a former Rector of the Azhar University, Cairo, issued as far back as 1942 the following pronouncement:

"There is nothing in the Qur'an, nor in the sacred Traditions of the Prophet, which authorizes the correctness of the belief to the contentment of the heart that Jesus was taken up to heaven with his body and is alive there even now, and would descend therefrom in the latter days." (For a fuller discussion see Mahmúd Shaltút, *al-Fatáwá*, Cairo, Egypt. Second edition, no date, pp. 59-65.)

This controversy has given rise to various other off-shoots. For example: The Holy Qur'an tells us very clearly that Muhammad (peace be on him!) is the last Prophet in the following verse.

مَا كَانَ مُحَمَّدٌ أَبَا أَحَدٍ مِّن رِّجَالِكُمْ وَلَكِن رَّسُولَ اللَّهِ
وَخَاتَمَ النَّبِيِّينَ

"Muhammad is not the father of any of your men, but he is the Messenger of Alláh and the last of the Prophets." (The Qur'an, 33:40.)

Also in the *Hadith*, the Holy Prophet Muhammad said:

"There is no prophet after me." (Al-Bukhárí, the *Sahih*, 64:78.)

One School of Thought amongst the Muslims say that, in the light of these verses from the Holy Qur'an and *Hadith*, any Muslim who believes that Prophet Jesus would return to this earth to live and then die, must answer the question as to who is the last prophet—Muhammad (peace be on him!) or Jesus. The Muslim declares in his faith that Muhammad (peace be on him!) is the last of the Prophets, but the belief that Jesus would return to this earth to live and die would imply that Jesus is the last of the Prophets. The other school of thought replies to it that on his return Jesus will not bring any new revelations but will act according to the Holy Qur'an, and that his second advent will be in his capacity as a Muslim, i.e. as a follower of the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!).

And so the controversy has gone on for the last fourteen centuries. When Alláh becomes displeased with a people, He takes away from them their sense of priorities.

Any Muslim wishing to obtain more knowledge regarding Jesus should refer to *The Passover Plot*, by Hugh J. Schonfield, London, 1966. It gives some outstanding details of the Dead Sea Scrolls and the birth, life and death of Jesus.

Another book of interest on this subject is *Honest to God*, by John A. T. Robinson, Bishop of Woolwich, London, 1963.

CHAPTER 9

Basic Dogmas of Christianity

The Trinity is perhaps the main dogma of Christianity, this being the Three in One and One in Three—Father, Son and Holy Ghost. But anyone asking a Christian which of the three is God will be given the answer that faith is needed to believe this and not questions. This conception of the Trinity is not an original idea. The Hindus also believe in a kind of Trinity which includes Brahmá, Vishnú and Shívá, which belief was in evidence thousands of years before the birth of Christ.

According to Christians, Jesus died to cleanse the sins of all mankind. He was crucified on Good Friday, was buried and descended into hell. He was resurrected on the third day (Sunday) and was raised into Heaven, there to sit on the right hand side of God.

A study of the Christian Bible will show that it has been tampered with by human hands, as the Holy Qur'an puts it:

قَوْلٌ لِلَّذِينَ يَكْتُبُونَ الْكِتَابَ بِأَيْدِيهِمْ
ثُمَّ يَقُولُونَ هَذَا مِنْ عِنْدِ اللَّهِ لِيَشْتَرُوا بِهِمْ ثَمَنًا قَلِيلًا
قَوْلٌ لَهُمْ مِمَّا كَتَبَتْ أَيْدِيهِمْ وَقَوْلٌ لَهُمْ مِمَّا
يَكْسِبُونَ ۝

Woe! then, to those who write the book with their hands then say: This is from Alláh! So that they may take for it a small price. So woe to them! For what their hands write and woe to them! For what they earn. (The Qur'an, 2: 79.)

Even the words of the Prophet Jesus have been contradicted and distorted so many times that they are beyond understanding or believing. And once all these facts become clear it is easy to understand why the European Christian nations are spoken of as *al-Masih al-Dajjal*.

With regard to belief in the Trinity and the redemption of sins, I would like to quote from an article published in *The Islamic Review* for December 1962.

"Had the belief in the Trinity been justified, or had it been a means of redemption from sins, so much so that without this belief redemption would be impossible, then what good grounds were there for the prophets from Adam to Muhammad (peace be on them!) refraining from persuading their people directly or indirectly of the truth of this belief? The law of Moses, which was in force until the advent of Jesus Christ, does not contain any support for this belief, and Jesus Christ also never told it to his people.

"The word 'Trinity' is not found even once in any part of the Bible. The Greek word for Trinity was first found in Theophilus of Antioch 180 years after Jesus' death (vide *The Catholic Encyclopaedia*, Vol. 15, p. 47.)

"The strongest argument brought forward in favour of the Doctrine of Trinity is the following text:

"'Go forth therefore and make all nations my disciples; baptize men everywhere in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit.' (Matthew, 28: 19-20.)

"There is nothing in this verse which confirms the Doctrine of Trinity, i.e., the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit, are co-equal and co-eternal. Another verse, 'These three are one' (1 John, 5:7), is recognized as spurious and is the addition of a copyist inserted long after John's time. Another text in support of this theory may be noted briefly here. This is:

"'When all things began, the Word already was. The Word dwelt with God, and what God was the Word was. The Word, then, was with God at the beginning.' (John, 1:1-2.)

"This verse is translated differently. According to the translators of the Centenary Bible it should read:

"'In the beginning was the Word. The Word was near God, and the Word was a Divine being. He was in the beginning near God.'

"This translation is substantially different, and does not give the least support to the Doctrine of Trinity.

"Like all other prophets, Jesus Christ was also a prophet and a chosen servant of God. Like any other prophet he worked miracles. But

miraculous deeds are no proof of Godhead, rather these are the proofs of prophethood and messengership. If his birth without father be presumed to be proof of his Divinity, then Adam and the angels who were created without parents can claim Divinity with stronger reasons. If his bringing the dead to life be looked upon as the evidence for his Divinity, then the quickening of the dead child by Elisha (II Kings, 4: 32-35) should also be considered a sign of Divinity, and the miracle at his tomb is the greatest of all the miracles, when a dead man thrown in the sepulchre of Elisha 'revived and stood up on his feet' (II Kings, 13: 20). This was a miracle performed by a prophet who was already dead. In short, as far as miracles are concerned, Jesus did nothing which other prophets were unable to do.

"If he had been above mortals, he would also have been above the needs of mortals, the most essential of which is partaking of food, without which no human can live, but of which God has no need. But Jesus Christ stood in need of eating and drinking for his existence exactly as we do. Divinity and want cannot blend together. God is a being who does not stand in need of anything, while everything stands in need of Him."

These are just a few of the Christian dogmas, and, if any Muslims do not know or understand the Christian religion and where the present form originated, they should study the ancient pagan religions of the Greeks, Romans, Egyptians, Persians, etc. Then they will find that the present-day Christianity is just another form of these ancient pagan conceptions. I will give more proof of this with the names and a few particulars of these ancient son-gods, and I will also point out certain of the Christian dogmas for comparison with the pagan religions.

Among the Greeks were Apollo and Dionysus. Karn among the Hindus and some others. Mithra among the Persians, about whom I have explained earlier in the book. Hercules among the Romans, Attis and Adonis in Phrygia and Syria. Prometheus of Caucasia, Baal and Astarte among the Babylonians and Carthaginians. Isis, Osiris and Horus among the Egyptians.

There are many others, too, and all were reported to be of virgin birth. All were born on or near Christmas Day in a cave, manger or such-like, and at the time of each birth, a new star appeared in the east. If Christian dignitaries are questioned concerning the similarity between

Christianity and the above-mentioned son-gods and the Hindu Trinity, their answer will be the same as always, that Satan introduced the religion of Jesus Christ to the ancient pagan idolators before the advent of Jesus on this earth to confuse the whole truth. Any sensible man can judge the authenticity of this for himself. All these ancient son-gods were given the names of saviour, deliverer, healer and mediator, etc., and all bore the sins of the whole world. All died to cleanse the sins of the world, descended into hell and rose again from the dead. A large number of their deaths occurred on or about the same time of the Christian Good Friday, and their resurrections coincide with the Christian Easter Day. All of them founded communions of saints and churches, and all are commemorated by eucharistic meals. They all had disciples and worked miracles, and all performed baptismal rights.

The Prophet Jesus, who was a Jew, held Saturday as the Sabbath Day, but present-day Christians hold it on Sunday, as do the followers of other pagan religions.

The Hindus look upon the waters of the Jumna and Ganges rivers as holy water, just as the Christians look upon the water of the River Jordan as holy water, and to them it is something to be rather proud of if one is baptized with water from the River Jordan.

The drinking of wine and the eating of bread at Holy Communion is another practice of the Christians, and the wine and bread symbolize the blood and flesh of Jesus. (Alláh forbid.)

The midnight mass held by Hindus at certain times is basically the same as the mass held by Roman Catholics, and the images of Jesus, some of them larger than life-size, and of Mary his mother, who is, incidentally, believed to be in Heaven in her earthly form and is also worshipped and referred to as the Mother of God, also images of angels, other prophets, saints, disciples and many others, are to be seen in the Christian churches and cathedrals, just as idols and images are to be found in the Hindu and Buddhist temples. Roman Catholics must confess all their misdemeanours and sins to their priest, and he in turn has the divine power to forgive their sins, or indeed, curse them for the same.

As with Buddhist, and some Hindu priests, the Roman Catholic priests and nuns are not allowed to marry, furthermore, once a marriage

has been consummated between two Roman Catholics, divorce is not allowed, but, if a couple obtain a divorce through the courts and they re-marry, then they are considered to be committing adultery.

The Bible is considered to be the direct word of God, and the word of the Pope is law; for it is claimed that he receives divine spiritual guidance from God to carry out His word. Muslims may also not know that Roman Catholicism was the first Christian religion, and today they number about 500 million, whilst the Protestant denominations of Christianity number about 180 million.

The Hindu superstitions are again repeated by the Roman Catholics with the marking of the forehead with black ash on Ash Wednesday; for the Hindus have been doing this for thousands of years, before Christianity came into being. Furthermore, the burning of the dead (cremation) is allowed in Christianity, just as it is by the Hindu and Buddhist faith. Indeed, it is becoming increasingly popular among the Christians today; but Jesus would never have allowed this, for, according to the Bible, Jesus said that he came to fulfil the law of Moses, not to break it. Christmas Day, being on the 25th of December, is also taken from the religions of the ancient sun-gods and other pagan religions; for no one had any idea as to the date of Jesus's birth, and it was a Scythian monk in Rome who assigned the day, date and month now accepted by the Christians. But it is not held on the 25th of December by all Christians; for the Greeks still hold their Christmas on the 7th of January.

The only difference between Christianity and these other religions is that the ancient pagans kept their belief among themselves (except the Romans), but not so the European Christians. They carry their religion all over the world and use it to dominate other nations, and this, once again, is why the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) gave them the name of *al-Masîh al-Dajjâl* (Antichrist), as I have already explained. (See Appendix, Chap. 6.)

It is, however, difficult to imagine these European Christians as *al-Masîh al-Dajjâl* when we have lived amongst them and been ruled by them for so many generations. But careful study of their background and culture will clearly show them as *Dajjâl* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj*. This can also be witnessed by the way in which the European nations consider themselves to be far superior to other nations of the world; for it is common knowledge that they have a very high opinion of themselves.

I would like to remind Muslim readers who do not know or understand much about Christianity that the New Testament of the Christian Bible was not written by Jesus or by anyone else in his time. It was, in fact, in part written long after the death of Jesus by Saint Paul, who was a Jewish Pharisee from Tarsus and he apparently held dual Jewish and Roman citizenship, and he had never met Jesus, but wrote only that which was related to him, as he was in prison for a very long time. What is more, his real name was Saul. As paganism and idolatry were very popular at that time, he mixed these dogmas with that which was related to him of the preachings of Jesus, and so wrote them all as being the true teachings of the Prophet Jesus.

Such was the influence of paganism at that time, that in his writings he mixed superstition and legend with the supposed word of God, i.e. that man was born without father and mother and without lineage, and was the son of God. I give here three verses from the Bible of St. Paul, there are of course two sections to the Bible, the Old and the New, and these verses are taken from the New Testament, The Acts of the Apostles.

"For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him; To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being by interpretation King of righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is, King of peace; Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginnings of days, nor end of life; but made like unto the Son of God; abideth a priest continually." (The Bible, Hebrews, 7:1-3.)

Even these writings of Saint Paul have been rewritten and altered many times in the past two thousand years, and this is why the Holy Qur'an warns us in the following verse:

فَوَيْلٌ لِلَّذِينَ يَكْتُبُونَ الْكِتَابَ بِأَيْدِيهِمْ ثُمَّ يَقُولُونَ
هَذَا مِنْ عِنْدِ اللَّهِ

"Woe! then, to those who write the Book with their hands then say, This is from Allāh." (The Qur'an, 2:79.)

There are three points which I would like to make here for any Christian readers. For the past two thousand years the Christians have

been following in the footsteps of the wrong people and in so doing have fallen into a Jewish trap from which they have little chance of escape.

Firstly. Saint Paul was a Jew who misunderstood and misinterpreted the teachings of Jesus, who incidentally, never claimed to be Christ or to have created Christianity, he was simply the reformer of the Jewish religion and by following the teachings of Saint Paul the Christians, Anglo-Saxon and Russian races (Slavs and Teutonics) are today becoming SOULLESS.

Secondly. Karl Marx was a Jew, and it was he who planted the seeds and firmly established the roots of Communism and Atheism, and the materialistic civilization, and whose philosophy was adopted by Communist leaders like Trotsky, who was a Jew. It is interesting to know also that the wives of Lenin and Stalin, respectively, were Jewesses. By following the teachings and ideologies of these Jews, the Anglo-Saxon and Russian races (Gog and Magog) have now become GODLESS and morally bankrupt.

Thirdly. We now have the example of Zionism, and the result of the Anglo-Saxon and Russian races following in the corrupt footsteps of their ideology which will result in them, and indeed in all mankind, becoming homeless and even stateless. The doctrines and conspiracies of Zionism through the ages will result in mankind losing everything, for if we are to taste the bitter fruits of nuclear warfare it will be as a result of the treachery, deception and conspiracies of Zionism. Let there be no doubt that the rest of the world has already fallen into this latest and final Zionist trap, and in so doing is nearing the final stage of becoming SOULLESS, GODLESS and STATELESS.

Is it any wonder that the Jews have always been despised, persecuted and cursed by mankind, Prophets and God Himself. The world has had ample warning and clear signs; it remains to be seen whether or not it takes heed before it is too late. (See Chapter 11.)

Britain and the Muslims

It was a strange quirk of history that a tiny island-nation like Britain began to dominate the Muslim world after it had gained a foothold due to the decline of Muslim power in the nineteenth century C.E. Gradually and systematically this overpowering colonial demon extended its influence and hegemony. The most coveted prize was, of course, India where the British had secured their main base of exploitation in early eighteenth century. Then the decline of the Ottoman Empire afforded them the opportunity of grabbing piecemeal Sudan, Egypt, Iraq, the Southern Arab coastal lands and the Gulf Emirates. Their strongholds in Gibraltar, the Suez Canal Zone, Aden and Singapore served as a formidable rearguard for their vast empire on which "the sun never set". Most of the territories constituting that empire were taken over from the Muslim rulers.

No doubt, for some years the British helped the dwindling Turkish Caliphate to maintain its political position. But this was certainly not due to any love of Muslims or any philanthropic strain in British character. It was based purely on the consideration of preventing Russia from becoming a threat to the British-occupied areas as well as the British-dominated States of Iran and Afghanistan. The exploitation of all these vast Muslim lands contributed in no small measure to the ascendancy of British to a level which could not be achieved by any rival power till the beginning of the present century.

It is true that Britain did adopt certain outward measures for the development of her colonies, such as introduction of the Western-oriented education in the English language and maintenance of some public services. The dominant motive, however, was the consolidation of the empire and the progress of the mother country, whose market and industry were fed by cheap raw material and foodstuffs from the occupied territories. The hewers of wood and the drawers of water eked out their existence, while the wealth of the colonies was being sucked by direct and indirect methods. It is true that people were being imparted education, and communications and other public facilities were being provided by the British masters, but these were only meant to run the administration smoothly and train the masses to rely more and more on official patronage and guidance. Indigenous industry and handicraft suffered, and cultural springs got

poisoned by the social and educational atmosphere created by the alien masters. Exploitation of local resources went on, while a sense of inferiority overtook the ruled. To be a *Sáhib* became a highly desirable achievement, and people began to lose their self-respect and the Islamic values so much prized by their forefathers.

This placid state of affairs could not go on for ever, and colonialism received its death blows during the two world wars. A sense of nationhood and an urge for independence began to stir things, and the masses gradually responded to the movement for overthrowing the foreign yoke. The leadership that emerged consisted of not only the newly educated classes and the local members of the colonial administration but also the old style '*Ulamá* who had not succumbed to the general apathy and torpor pervading the subjugated Muslim countries. The names of Jamáluddín Afghání (d. 1897 C.E.), Sayyid Ahmad *Shahid* (d. 1842 C.E.), Hasan al-Banná (d. 1949 C.E.) and others stand out conspicuous as fighters in the cause of Islamic renaissance and independence.

Different countries of the British empire adopted different courses to gain their independence. But here we are concerned with the sole question of Britain's tactics in obstructing the path of freedom in every Muslim country. A stage came when she could hardly maintain her preponderance, because the two world wars had sapped her economic and political strength. She was no longer in a position to resist the struggle for independence. That she would make a virtue of necessity was clear to many of us. But that she would in the process act immorally and maliciously was hardly compatible with the high-sounding pronouncements of its Ministers and Parliamentarians.

The most glaring instance of Britain's duplicity and moral bankruptcy was the Balfour Declaration which eventually led to the establishment of Israel in the very heart of the Muslim world in 1948. In Egypt she was careful and malicious enough to keep control of the Suez Canal Zone so that she might be able to choke and throttle at any time any manifestation of independence on the part of Egyptians.

The Muslim India was accorded the same treatment. Britain left New Delhi in August 1947, taking good care that the new State of Pakistan should not survive for long [and indeed, a well organized plan had been set out beforehand, as we can see if we look at the situation between East

and West Pakistan in March 1971.] The unjust demarcation of borders, the river water dispute and the Kashmir question, all confirm that it was Britain's desire to impose such an inequitable partition as would eliminate all chances of Pakistan's viability on the one hand and her being on cordial terms with India on the other. Who can forget that it was Britain's Philip Noel Baker who, when the Security Council was poised to award Kashmir to Pakistan by reason of its Muslim majority, specially urged upon the Council an unpopular, despotic ruler's right to accede to whatever Dominion he likes. It was, therefore, with usual bitterness that we heard Michael Stewart recently stating that Britain had no responsibility or desire to work for a peaceful settlement of the Kashmir dispute.

Next comes the handing over of Muslim Eritrea to the Christian-dominated Abyssinia. But such examples can be multiplied many times so far as Africa is concerned. Britain left Nigeria in such a terrible mess that even the most exemplary efforts of al-Hajj Ahmadu Bello and al-Hajj Abu Bakr Tafawa Balewa could not keep it united and peaceful long enough. It was their largest colony in Africa. After Britain had added to it Southern Cameroons, a colony taken from Germany in 1918, the whole area was administered and developed in true British fashion. The result was that when independence came in 1960 the administrative staff and the officers of the Army were mostly Christian Ibos. The domination of the North was resented by Christians, and even though the ruling party had won two elections, the Chief of Staff, General Ironsi, staged a *coup d'etat* and the Muslim Prime Minister and his friend, Ahmadu Bello, leader of the North, were murdered.

In Eastern Africa vast numbers of Muslims were abandoned to the mercy of their Christian compatriots who had been specially trained by Britain to take over the administration from the departing masters. This same policy was also consistently followed in other newly emerging nations of Africa such as Zanzibar, Tanzania, Malawi and Ghana. The Whitehall saw to it that the Christian minorities, British-trained officers or political adventurers gained the supreme power, making it impossible for the voice of Muslim masses to be heard.

Nearly the same pattern is being followed in respect of the Southern Arabian and Persian Gulf States where the unpreparedness of the local population for shouldering the responsibilities of self-government may still invite intrusion. The general trend of the British policy has always been

and will continue to be to keep their channels of trade open even in the countries where leftist Governments have eliminated their political influence. Malaysia, Singapore, India, Pakistan, the Gulf States, the former British colonies of Africa should, in their scheme of things, go on providing wide open markets for the British traders and industrialists. This has become the dominant factor in their policy, and they remain busy extracting the maximum from their "business empire". Their political leaders go on making high-sounding speeches to cover this essentially selfish approach to problems created by their inept and unjustified settlement, imposed on the former colonies at the time of their departure. The Muslims are still the victims of their cunningness and insincerity.

"America's Very Special Relationship with Israel"

"The White House invitation and reception recently accorded Israel's Defence Minister, Moshe Dayan, is illustrative of the very special relationship the United States has developed with his country over the past 22 years. It is doubtful whether a Nato or Seato defence chief would have been granted such high protocol treatment. Most would have had to be satisfied with meeting the Defence Secretary, Mr. Melvin Laird, or in exceptional cases, the Secretary of State, Mr. Rogers, or the Vice-President.

"When President Truman said in October 1948: 'We are pledged to a State of Israel, large enough, free enough and strong enough to make its people self-supporting and secure,' the stage was set for the gradual establishment of an association between the United States and another country unique in American history. Today, that association is far closer in all areas — defence, economic collaboration, intelligence exchange, common citizenship and mutual diplomatic support then enjoyed, for example, between the United States and Great Britain.

"Unique also is Israel's almost total immunity from criticism in the United States — a situation hardly paralleled by our European or Asian allies, many of whose faults and frailties are daily aired in our communications media and by our legislative representatives. Perhaps as James Reston of the *New York Times* suggested a short while ago, '... you can put it down as a general rule that any criticism of Israel's policies, will be attacked by antisemitism.'

"And so it goes in reverse, with Israel's image as a small, democratic, courageous little country struggling to survive in a sea of uncivilized, blood thirsty, pro-communist Arabs, representing — rightly or wrongly — the view of most Americans. A new, very impressive colour documentary film on *Israel and the Bible* sponsored by Billy Graham and to be shown in 1,200 Christian churches throughout the United States each month, will support this image.

¹ This is the text of an article that appeared in the earlier editions of *The Times* of London for 5th February 1971, but was withdrawn from its later editions.

"In dollars and cents, America's assistance to Israel through the years, both governmental and private, has been prodigious. During the 20 years period between 1948-1968, the United States government economic aid totalled \$11,000m., while dollar transfers from private sources amounted to \$25,000m., a total of \$36,000, or \$1,400 per capita on a current population of 2,500,000. This greatly exceeds on a per capita basis, United States assistance to any ally and compares to \$35 per capita to the peoples of thirteen neighbouring states. Since 1968, American assistance to Israel has greatly increased. Dollar transfers in 1970 reached \$800m. and in 1971 will approximate \$1.5 billion.

"Until 1967, we assured Israel a continuing supply of modern military equipment directed through West Germany and France and we were thus able to avoid Arab hostility. However, with the conclusion of German 'reparations' and de Gaulle's change in Middle East Policy, America has since 1967 become the exclusive purveyor of arms to Israel.

"Of greater significance is the fact that qualitatively, America has provided aircraft, missiles, and electronic systems of greater sophistication and greater strike capability than those furnished our Nato and Seato allies. For example, Greece, Turkey, and Iran, which form the northern tier defence line against the Soviet Union, have not yet received our Phantom aircraft. A few weeks ago, the House of Representatives passed an amendment to the Defence Procurement Bill giving the President open-ended authority to transfer military equipment to Israel without total cost limitation.

"As the Speaker of the House, Mr. McCormack, remarked: '... I have never seen in my 42 years as a member of this body, language of this kind ...' Great Britain at the height of its struggle with Hitler, never received such a 'blank cheque'. Nor, in more recent times, has South Vietnam. The Senate on 15th December 1970, by a 60 to 20 vote, killed the Williams' Amendment to the Defence Appropriations Bill which would have restricted the President from sending United States troops into Israel without Congressional permission. Many who are supporting similar limitations with regard to Cambodia in the Cooper-Church Amendment opposed the Israel restriction.

"There has been significance also in Washington's reaction to the Soviet action in putting an anti-aircraft missile defence system in Egypt

which began before and was apparently completed after the cease fire arrangements undertaken at the Secretary of State Mr. Rogers' initiative last summer. The concern has greatly exceeded that generated by reports of air-to-ground Soviet missiles and nuclear submarines in Cuba today in defiance of the 1961 Kennedy-Khrushchev understanding.

"In the area of nuclear weapons, the United States has also pursued an exceptional position vis-a-vis Israel. During the years when we were pressing over 100 nations in the world community with whatever diplomatic, economic and military leverage we might have to adhere to the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty Israel alone was exempted from strong representations. In fact we may have encouraged Israel to refrain from assuming the obligations set forth in this international undertaking. Through a study prepared at the White House request by the Rand Corporation of California, we provided Israel with the most advanced technical and political data on the effective use of nuclear weapons in the Middle East.

"*The Jewish Press* in December 1970 summarized the nuclear situation. 'The experts who before the Six-Day War felt that India would become the next member of the nuclear club now believe that the next member will be Israel'. This, in fact, has already occurred. The nuclear reactors at Dimona and Nahal Sorek have been reported for several years to be producing plutonium sufficient for ten 25-kiloton bombs a year.

"The widely-read *Nuclear War and Nuclear Peace* recently published by the former head of Israel Army Intelligence, General Y. Harakabi, is the current authority on the use of nuclear weapons in the Middle East conflict. In contrast to our intense opposition to France's nuclear development, the United States has supported Israel in virtually an identical policy.

"In the exchange of intelligence, American co-operation with Israel is unprecedented and goes far beyond the special nuclear arrangements with Great Britain based on the McMahon Act. During the months before the June 1967 hostilities, the military intelligence requirements required by Washington from American embassies, the Central Intelligence Agency and military intelligence staffs in the Middle East were very largely based on Israeli needs, not on American interests. The effectiveness of the Israeli air strikes on 5th June 1967 was assured at least in part, by

information on Egyptian airfields and aircraft disposition provided through American sources.

"With political and economic information, it has long been State Department practice to provide the Israeli Embassy in Washington with copies of all our reports from Middle East embassies considered to be of interest. A summary by Ray Vickers about this co-operation appeared in the *Wall Street Journal* on 12th February 1970. When the American naval intelligence ship "Liberty" was attacked by Israeli air and sea units in June 1967—with the loss of 34 dead and 71 injured, the incident resulted in minimum official reaction. It boggles the imagination to speculate as to the reaction were the attackers to have been British or French, much less Egyptian, as initially assumed.

"Israel also enjoys an exceptional position on the question of dual citizenship. Under long-standing citizenship laws an American voting in the elections or serving in the armed forces or government of a foreign country loses his citizenship. By a recent Supreme Court interpretation, Americans may serve in Israel in this manner without loss of citizenship. Under the *Israel Law of Return*, an American Jew entering Israel is automatically given Israeli nationality.

"Since the war in June 1967, and particularly during the past year, American commitments to Israel have been greatly expanded. Before 1967 the United States was committed to Israel's territorial integrity within the 1948 armistice lines and to her economic viability. Tangentially, Washington favoured a military balance in the Middle East. In the United Nations Resolution of November 1967, America, in effect, opposed Israel's retention of the territories conquered by force the previous June. This fundamental position has now changed very radically.

"Last summer, in a series of statements from the San Clemente 'White House', the Nixon Administration would appear to have extended the territorial integrity commitment to include, until a final peace settlement, the occupied territories; to have moved from assuring a military balance, to guaranteeing Israel a 'military superiority capable of launching a rapid knock-out blow' against her neighbours and to have supported Israel's continued 'racial exclusiveness', thereby negating our 18 years of support for the United Nations Palestine refugee formula of 'repatriation or compensation'.

"When asked during his 10th December 1970 press conference whether America still adhered to its position on Israeli withdrawal from the 'occupied territories', President Nixon, for the first time evaded the issue by saying that it was a matter for negotiation.

"Finally, the assignment and advancement of personnel in the Department of State to the top positions relating to Middle East policy have traditionally been subject to prior approval by the American Zionist leadership. As an example in reverse, the firing of the United Nations Ambassador, Mr. Charles W. Yost, was demanded by 'the pro-Israel lobby', as recently reported by the columnists, Evans and Novak.

"This special relationship would appear to have the full and massive support of most Americans and certainly of the Congress and the Press. It is hardly surprising therefore that every Administration since that of President Truman has worked towards establishing closer and more cordial ties with Israel as one of the cardinal principles of American foreign policy. General Moshe Dayan, Israeli Defence Minister, when he met President Nixon, was in a far more enviable position than other top foreign leaders visiting Washington; whether they be Mr. Heath, Prime Minister of Great Britain, M. Pompidou, President of France, or Herr Willy Brandt, Chancellor of West Germany, or representatives of Asian, African or Latin American countries friendly to the United States.

"Only history can provide the total explanation for this very special American-Israeli relationship. It has now reached a point where Israel's security and welfare is considered vital to American welfare, but our reaction to any threats against Israel is more intense than with any of our Nato or Seato allies. One State Department humorist has said:

" 'Were Israel's survival to be seriously threatened, we would be in the third world war in two minutes—with Berlin, it might take several days'."

DAVID NES

[I would ask my readers to give serious thought to what they have read, and to ask themselves whether or not it is logical. I would also refer them once more to the *Encyclopaedia of Islam*, as mentioned in Chapter Four, entitled: Warning to the Jews: "... *They (Yájúj and Májúj) will be destroyed in the land of Israel.*"]

Oh, America!

(The text of an article by Mr. Saqqaf)

"Things continue to happen in this holy sea of high living and indifferent morals. The land which once proved a haven of refuge to the fleeing Quaker fathers has now all the markings of a veritable vandalism. Depravity and degeneration, disillusion and fear rule the roost at home, while abroad its influence is discovered to be at the bottom of every intrigue and aggression, *coup* and conspiracy.

"First the systematic decimation of the Red Indian population. Then the continued enslavement and dehumanization of the black man. And now all the hell it has let loose on the brown and yellow races of the world.

"Whether in Japan where it unleashed the atomic horror. In Vietnam where its planes have poured 15 tons of death and destruction, misery and fire on every acre. In the Middle East where its shameless conniving in Israeli Nazi crimes is nurturing the seeds of the third world war. This nation entrusted by God with unprecedented power and wealth has made the most unprecedented and unbroken efforts in history to invite the wrath of God upon itself.

"The wrath of God has arrived. The mills have started to grind. Symptoms stab the eye wherever one turns. But it takes a certain type of eye to perceive the impact and read the hidden meaning.

"Addiction to heroin—'white death'—has become an agonizing and intractable national problem. According to many sources its current dimensions, if not its roots, are clearly traceable to the war in Vietnam.

"The Navy discharged 60,000 of its men last year and mumbled something about the situation being '*out of control*'. Fort Bragg, the nation's third largest army base, houses a modest 1,400 'hard addicts' under its stern military roofs, while confessing that between 40% to 60% of the other men '*have tried some kind of drug or another*'. Over 400 pot-loving Americans are at present adorning the cells of European prisons.

"Observers are convinced that the very foundations of this society have been rocked by this curse.

“ ‘Fragging’ , as a means of protest and dissent, is gaining in popularity among the G.I.s in Vietnam. Over-enthusiastic officers who also have a penchant for hard discipline find themselves the target of hand-grenade attacks by their own men.

“ The mammoth 27 billion dollars voted by the House Armed Services Committee to increase the military pay in a projected all-volunteer army of the future, is felt to be a measure of the desperation stalking the nation's policy makers. Whereas the Committee Chairman Edward Herbert's dour declaration that the ‘ American's patriotism ’ cannot ‘ be bought with a dollar sign ’, is considered a grim presage of the things to come.

“ The ill-fated Laos incursion has stretched the Americans' credulity and exercised their linguistic capabilities as never before. The panicky retreat of the invaders is described by ‘ official spokesmen ’ as ‘ *withdrawal under heavy pressure and vicious reaction from the enemy* ’ in one official breath, and in another as ‘ *mobile manoeuvring which is proceeding according to plan* ’. Some insist that the offensive which was a grand ‘ strategical success ’ is now in its ‘ *withdrawal phase* ’.

“ After giving all the claims and counter-claims, a newspaper had this to say by way of elaboration: field reports indicate that every available inch of space on the armoured vehicles being used for evacuation was taken by withdrawing soldiers, none of whom had their weapons with them. Several soldiers were reported to have fallen to their death when they desperately clung to the skids of helicopters rather than get left behind in Laos.

“ Alongside was a tell-tale photograph of soldiers dangling in mid-air from helicopter skids!

“ All this has lent considerable depth and width to what is called the ‘ credibility gap ’ by modest officials. Gallup polls, however, put it more crudely—‘ *Seven out of ten Americans don't believe what the administration is saying* ’.

“ Talking of the credibility gap, on 20th February 1971, the broadcasters over the nation all of a sudden received the following message on the wires: ‘ This is an emergency notification directed by the President.

Normal broadcasting will cease immediately. . . .’ Ninety-two per cent of the stations simply shrugged off the message and continued with their ‘ normal broadcasting ’. On inquiry one-third of them simply said they ‘ questioned the validity of the message ’.

“ Corruption and crime have reached Himalayan proportions. The F.B.I. has disclosed an 11% climb in ‘ serious crime ’ over the last year. Two weeks ago a Chicago bank lost six million dollars through embezzlement. Yesterday a Los Angeles attorney was apprehended for alleged role in a racket involving pretty girls and water-beds.

“ A few days earlier Joseph Strauss, a former West German defence and finance minister, was manhandled in a New York street by three prostitutes who de-camped with 180 dollars in American money and 300 Deutschmarks when they failed to drag the burly ex-minister into a waiting car.

“ *A Readers' Digest* article says that stress, anxiety and overwork have robbed 40% American males of the ability to have normal sex life. According to some sources, American customers are cheated to the staggering extent of 6.12 billion dollars yearly in ‘ short-weighting ’ by shops and stores.

“ It is a well-known fact that big crime has some of the top State and city officials on its pay rolls. Recently the mayor of a metropolitan city was indicted by federal grand jury on charges of ‘ conspiracy, inter-state bribery and fraud ’.

“ While his connections with the notorious Mafia are being discussed and the net is being tightened around another big-time mobster, the man said to be the real head of the Mafia, the reputed ‘ financial genius of the underworld ’, Meyer Lansky, is treating himself to a grand holiday in the Dan Hotel in Tel Aviv. Evidently the great American public is too well drugged to be able to take stock of the incalculable damage men like this crime king have done to its values and way of life. Nor does it occur to them to either figure out the importance of the racketeer's Jewish name or probe the mystery of an Israeli vacation.

“ International Zionism merrily continues to dictate the policies at the White House and have an enormous finger in the pie of decisions

affecting the destinies of nations. It also carries a big stick. Secretary Rogers had only to open his mouth and plead with Israel to vacate the fruits of her aggression to be pounced upon by the Zionist fronts and lackeys everywhere, including the Senate and other position of power.

"Abba Eban flew in from Tel Aviv, frothing at the mouth over the Secretary's impudence, and armed with what seemed like a definite Zionist ultimatum. The Secretary of State of the most powerful country in the world, who was only moments ago talking with deep foreboding of an impending global war, provoked by flagrant Israeli intransigence, woke up to find himself retracing almost word for word his earlier statement.

"Sweat and shame pouring from every Christian and moral pore he vainly sought to label the stark capitulation to Zionist arm-twisting as 'clearing up misunderstandings'. But the world in a rare moment of revelation had been afforded too sure and too close a glimpse of happenings behind the scenes.

"While the Zionist-controlled press spoke obliquely and menacingly of the 'Arabists' in the State Department, Senator Symington summed up his friend Rogers' predicament by calling him the 'laughing stock' of Washington's evening circles. The cause: Henry Kissinger modestly described as 'the national security aid to the President' but in reality the unquestioned monarch of policy-making on domestic as well as foreign affairs.

"While the Senator's well developed fear of being screamed out of court as an 'anti-Semite' (a title the Jews give to those who dare to speak the truth about them) by the Zionist mobs as well as his own brain-washed, mind-controlled people, kept him from saying about Dr. Kissinger's Jewish origin, the fact remains that not a blade of grass ever moves in this country without the Zionists' wish or against their interests.

"All this bowing and scraping to the Zionist overlords which is so apparent in the top circles here caused a local observer to remark: 'Once it used to be stressed that Israel was not the 51st State of the Union. Now it turns out that this country is little more than the kitchen-garden of Tel Aviv.'

"Sources versed in the 'Protocols' (the notorious Zionist manifesto for world conquest) and other Zionist source-books believe that the

Zionists now consider it opportune to complete their take-over of the United Nations. A member of their tribe is being given a careful all-round grooming in the succession-race to the General Secretaryship of the world body which a sadly disillusioned U Thant has decided to vacate.

"When that happens, as these sources point out it has every likelihood of happening, the most powerful man in the White House, who happens to be a Jew, will be joined by the most powerful man in the United Nations, another Jew.

"And thus, these sources insist, 'will the visible and invisible boundaries of the State of Zion — the future Empire of the World — continue to grow and expand at the expense of a bemused and befuddled world which refused to see the light in time!'

"In answer to who they think the Zionists are, they quote a recent *New York Times* report which had said that 95% of America's Jews have unconcealed Zionist preferences.

"Attractive Israeli girls were freed from military service in Jerusalem to entertain guests from the United Nations — 'Enlistment to the Israeli cause which took place between the sheets came second to systematic and organized corruption.'

"Maj.-General Carl Van Horn, former Commander of the U.N. troops in Palestine, in his book *Soldiers of Peace*."

Wild women are on the increase

More American women are turning to crime and violence, according to the Federal Bureau of Investigation.

During the last 10 years arrests of women for major crimes increased by 200.6 per cent, compared with an increase of 72.7 per cent for men.

Four women are on the FBI's "most wanted" list. More women are being arrested for murder and bank robbery, tending to be full partners with men, rather than accomplices as in the past.

Most experts blame feminine attraction to crime on the growth of drug addiction and the changing role of women. (*Daily Telegraph*, London, 16th September 1971.)

CHAPTER 12

Muslims in Soviet Union

The author of this article, Dr. Baymirza Huyit, is a Turkistani Muslim scholar who has been residing in West Germany for the last 25 years and doing research on Soviet imperialism in Central Asia. He is well known for books and numerous pamphlets and articles in specialised periodicals on the history of the country and its people. The article is from Al-Ittihad of Canada.

In 1917 (the year of revolution) there were 40 million Muslims in Soviet Russia. On 10th December 1955 former Soviet Premier Khrushchev said in Srinagar that there are now 15 million Muslims in the Soviet Union. If Khrushchev's figure is correct, we are moved to ask the grave question as to where are the other 25 million Muslims? (leaving aside the natural increase in population during the last 38 years at the 1.5 per cent per annum (which comes to 23 million on a 40 million population, bringing the total to 63 million).) Have they been physically exterminated or compulsorily registered as atheists?

At the present time, the Russians do not shrink from any means of exterminating Islam, and are devoting particular attention to the development of atheist propaganda and to giving the masses an atheistic outlook. Here is a glimpse of such anti-Islam measures :

From 1924 to 1926 the religious estates were irrevocably confiscated.

At the end of 1926, all the *Shariat* courts were abolished.

In 1927, the activities of the Supreme Religious Administration were prohibited.

From 1928 onwards, all the influential Muslim personalities (Muftis, Kadis, Ulemas, Alims, Eshans, Imams, Muezzins, Sayyeds Khodjas) were arrested.

From 1929 to 1933 more than one and a half million members of the powerful Islamic Naqshbandiya Order, which was founded in Turkistan in the 13th century and which plays an important role in the religious life of the Near East, were arrested.

In 1929 a campaign started to close all the Mosques one after another.

From 1928 to 1935, more than 25,000 Islamic personalities were arrested, more than 10,000 Mosques closed and torn down, more than 14,000 religious primary schools and more than 500 Madressas closed.

From 1936 onward all Mosques were either demolished or converted into prisons, tourist hotels and stores.

In 1929, the printing and propagation of religious writing was prohibited by law. Religious instruction for children has also been forbidden since 1929. The religious parishes had to enrol with the Ministry of the Interior and obtain a special permit to carry on with their activities. Muslims were not permitted to organize conferences or carry out welfare work. From 1929 to 1936 the police seized every copy of the Qur'an it could get its hands on and these were burned !

From 1928 to 1938 terror became the leitmotif of the struggle against Islam. This was at the same time assisted by the increased propaganda of the beligerent Godless Association (Atheists' Association) which was spread from 1926 to 1941.

In the struggle against Islam all the media of mass communication such as radio, film, press, museums of atheism, theatres, posters, atheist lectures and teaching in the schools were utilized. In the Soviet Republic of Uzbekistan a good 23,000 anti-religious lectures were delivered in 1962 alone. Agitation went on against Islam in 800 radio and film halls, in 900 so-called atheist corners (rooms in public buildings where atheist writings and notices are on display and where atheist meetings are held), in 14 universities of atheism and in 6 atheist houses. All this information was published in the Soviet newspaper *Qizil Ozbekistan* of April 6th 1963.

The present-day methods of combating Islam include principally anti-religious publications, question and answer evenings with atheists and believers, film shows and the public slandering of those Muslims who go to the Mosque, campaigning against fastings and religious celebrations within the family as well as the education of young people to the advantage of atheism.

Particularly characteristic was the establishment of the first University of Atheism at Ashkhabad in 1959. In the age of the colonialism of Western Europe, no Islamic country ever had such an institution. Today in Uzbekistan alone there are 14 such universities, in which atheist propagandists are trained, and yet in the whole of Turkistan there is not one single genuine Islamic theological college. The Medressah "Mir Arab" was opened in Bukhara, but its function is to train Soviet agents for the Islamic countries.

In addition to propaganda against Islam terrorist measures are also carried out against those believers who publicly express their support of Islam. A Soviet court sentenced three Turkistanians (Bayjan, Mameddurdy and Tirrioglu) to 12, 15 and 20 years imprisonment respectively because they collected money which was to be used in the interests of Islamic propaganda. Mrs. Hatisa Kotsghan was stabbed to death by two young atheists in 1960 because she wanted to say her prayers in a Mosque. The state prosecutor declared cynically that if there were no such thing as religion this murder would not have occurred.

The Soviets are fully aware that Islam constitutes a force to be reckoned with in the free Orient and thus they remain quiet about the fact that they intend to combat Islam everywhere in the future. The following official remarks do, however, reveal their real intentions :

"Belief in Allāh indicates to man an unreal and false way for his actions."

"Muhammad was not an envoy of God, but a mercenary in the service of the Arab feudal overlords."

"Islam at the present time is the handmaid of imperialism."

"The Soviet being does not believe in the power of the Almighty but in his own achievements."

The Soviet leaders also encourage the fusion of Muslims and Russians, particularly in the younger generation, and the isolation of the Turkistanian Muslims from the rest of the Islamic world. Factors destined to promote such isolation of the Arabic script in the years 1928 to 1929, the prohibition of the pilgrimage from 1918 onwards, the ban on the reading of religious writings and on the reprinting of classical works in the spirit of Islam.

All the attempts made by the Turkistanian to uphold their feeling of "belonging" to the Islamic cultural circle were radically suppressed under the pretext that they constituted "Pan-Turkism".

The ban on the pilgrimage was particularly grievous for the Muslims. Since 1950, 15 to 20 agents have been sent out to do propaganda for the Soviets among the pilgrims. Prior to Soviet rule 35,000 to 50,000 pilgrims travelled to Mecca every year for the Hajj.

Since 1953, many persons from the Islamic countries have been invited to visit Turkistan. The members of foreign delegations also conversed with the Red Mufti in Tashkent, but rarely could they recognize the real attitude of the Soviets towards Islam.

However, those who were serious students of the plight of the Muslims and of Islam in Turkistan returned embittered. The Maulana Raghīb Ahsban is one of these, and this is what he had to say after coming back from heading a Pakistani delegation to the Soviet Union and Turkistan :

"The truth is that the non-Russian peoples ruled by Russia enjoy neither freedom nor equality nor any form of rights. Soviet propaganda in the Orient spreads lies about the freedom of the peoples and of religion, in order to win over the Muslims of Pakistan, Afghanistan, Iran and Arab countries.

"We saw that the Muslims of Turkistan hate the Russians and that the independence movement is very strong. The religious administration in Tashkent is not a body which supports religion and takes over responsibility for religious education, but is simply a government office enabling the Communist Russians to control religion."

Indeed, the struggle today against Islam is not weaker than it used to be. The periodical *Partyy'naja Zhizn, Kazakhstana*, Alma-Ata, No. 1963, pp. 50-53, is informative about the methods used :

"Do not defend yourselves, but attack ! Remnants of religion and superstition possess great powers of existence and continuance. They stand in the way of many people becoming active builders of Communism. For that reason, the (Communist) party has always waged an

ideological struggle against religions. 'We must,' said Lenin, 'fight against religions. That is the first letter of every kind of materialism, and of course of Marxism too. One must be in a position to fight against the religions. For this, it is necessary to explain the sources of belief and comment on the religions of the mass materialistically'." (*Lenin, Collected Works*, Vol. 15, p. 374.)

Soviet Russia's policy of enmity against Islam is at present concentrated particularly against Turkistan, because the Islamic spirit is especially alive there. The struggle against Islam is part and parcel of Soviet-Russian colonial policy in Turkistan regardless of whether brutal force or the art of propagandist persuasion is applied. As long as Islam remains unconquered the people extend a moral support in its dispute with the colonial power and the latter's success is thus endangered. The end of the fight between the Soviets and Islam is not yet in sight.

CONCLUSION

I would like to request my Muslim brothers and sisters not to look upon this book as a fairy tale and discard it, but to read it again and again with a true Islamic mind. I would also ask this of any Christian who may read it that he does so with a clear and open mind because it has been written with a strictly Islamic spirit and ideology.

I am in no way prejudiced against Christianity; for, as a Muslim, my religious principles do not allow me to be so. But I merely wish to point out, to Muslims and Christians alike, the way Christianity has been doctored and turned into another form of paganism.

Though this book is very small it has not been a rush effort. On the contrary, I have given over fifteen years' serious study and contemplation to the subject, and read a vast number of books before it occurred to me to write it. And then it was only done in the hope that it would be of some help to Muslims and Christians alike.

Let every Muslim who reads this book think awhile and ask himself if the prophecies of the Holy Qur'an and our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) have been fulfilled or not in our day. And if he, as a true-thinking Muslim, agrees that they have been fulfilled, then let him settle his differences and disagreements with his fellow Muslim brother; and let us all become united. Let us not become divided into different sects and thus lose the purity and value of our religion.

Even if, as our Holy Prophet warns us, we cannot fight the evil of European vices, let us be sure that we ourselves do not indulge in them; but if by chance we are inclined to weaken, let us pray for help and guidance from Allāh to keep us on the straight path, which is to us long and tiring at times but well worth it, for it leads us ultimately to Allāh. Let us not be diverted from this path by the pleasures and vices of earthly life, from which we get no value or reward at the end; and let us all remember the words of our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!), when he told us that earth is Heaven for the *Kāfir* (Disbeliever) and hell for the *Mu'min* (Believer); for this shows us quite clearly that the life hereafter is far superior to the temporary life on this earth; for, like our Holy Prophet, we are just travellers on this earth, and, if we want the joy and pleasures of the life hereafter, we have only to live by the teachings

of our Holy Book, which contains no superstition nor mystery, but a pure straightforward way of life, pleasing to us and pleasing to Allāh.

All Muslims should bear in mind that the Holy Qur'ān was sent by Allāh for a definite purpose, and we should not cast aside or disregard its metaphorical language without searching for its reason and meaning, for Allāh does not waste words or use them idly. He gave us our religion and the Book as a clear guidance for life on this earth and the life Hereafter.

If we disregard or take away all the metaphorical language in the Holy Qur'ān, we become so much the poorer; for each metaphorical verse contains a wealth of meaning and guidance, and it is up to us to search for its meaning and guidance; for the Holy Qur'ān is a guidance for all mankind till the end of the world. Therefore, naturally, its words of guidance as interpreted by a people of a thousand years ago will not help sufficiently and guide the people of today, or in another hundred years hence; for, as time goes by, more and more of its metaphorical meanings will come to light, and, in so far as *Dajjāl* and *Yájúj* and *Májúj* are concerned, these prophecies have been fulfilled to a great extent already. As we can witness today, it is just a matter of time before we see the completion of these prophecies; for they must and will be fulfilled eventually.

Our Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be on him!) advises us that, if a Muslim gains any knowledge from the Holy Qur'ān, it is obligatory on him to point it out to his brother Muslims, and this is what I have tried to do in these pages to the best of my ability. I think I am in a fairly good position to judge for myself concerning *Dajjāl*, as I have lived in a European country for over thirty years, and during that time I have made a very careful study of their culture and their morals and gained a great deal of knowledge from their behaviour, which has been a tremendous help to me in writing this book.

I shall now close with the words of a distinguished Muslim poet and scholar who is, I am sure, loved and remembered by many Muslims and who dedicated his entire life to the reconstruction of Islam from the light of the Holy Qur'ān, and his name, of course, is the late Dr. Muhammad Iqbal (may his soul rest in peace!).

In 1908 he wrote a poem in which he warned the Western people as follows:

دیوار مغرب کے رہنروا لوفدا کی بستی دوکان نہیں ہے
کھرا بجے تم سمجھ رہے ہو وہ اب زر کم عیار ہو گا
تمہاری تہذیب اپنے خنجر سے آپ ہی خود کش کریگی
جوشاخ نازک پہ آشیانہ بنے گا نابایدار ہو گا

*"O residents of the West, God's earth is not a shop!
The gold you think to be genuine will now prove to be
of low value.*

*Your civilization is going to commit suicide with her
own dagger.*

*The nest which is made on a frail bough cannot but be
insecure."*

(Dr. Muhammad Iqbal, *Bāng-i Darā*.)

He then warns the Muslims after the Russian Revolution in 1917 (when the new Communist State came into being) as follows:

*"The forces of Gog and Magog have all been let loose.
Let the Muslims' eye see the comment of Yansilún."*
(Ibid.)

Yansilún (i.e., they sally forth) is the last word of the Qur'ānic verse which speaks of Gog and Magog overcoming the world:

لَا إِذَا فُتِحَتْ
يَا جُوجُ وَمَا جُوجُ وَهُمْ مِّنْ كُلِّ حَدَبٍ يَنْسِلُونَ ﴿٩٠﴾

*"When Gog and Magog are made to overcome the world and they
shall break forth from every elevated place." (The Qur'ān, 21:96.)*

O followers of Islam, do not be heedless, wake up and see what happens around the world, and then bow down and prostrate to Allāh your Lord, asking for His forgiveness and help. Otherwise you may have no time for repentance.

رَبَّنَا لَا تُؤَاخِذْنَا إِنْ نَسِينَا أَوْ أَخْطَأْنَا، رَبَّنَا
وَلَا تَحْمِلْ عَلَيْنَا إِصْرًا كَمَا حَمَلْتَهُ عَلَى الَّذِينَ
مِنْ قَبْلِنَا، رَبَّنَا وَلَا تُحَمِّلْنَا مَا لَا طَاقَةَ لَنَا بِهِ،
وَاعْفُ عَنَّا وَارْحَمْنَا إِنَّكَ أَنْتَ مَوْلَانَا
فَانصُرْنَا عَلَى الْقَوْمِ الْكَافِرِينَ ﴿٢٨٦﴾

"Our Lord! punish us not if we forget or make a mistake. Our Lord, do not lay on us a burden as Thou didst lay on those before us. Our Lord, impose not on us (afflictions) which we have not the strength to bear. And pardon us! And grant us protection! And have mercy on us! Thou art our Patron, so grant us victory over the disbelieving people! Amen."
(The Qur'ān, 2:286.)